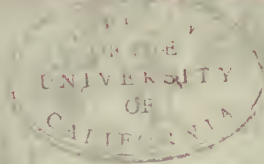


D  
626  
G3F5

UC-NRLF



C 2 812 399



# THE ES OF GERMANY



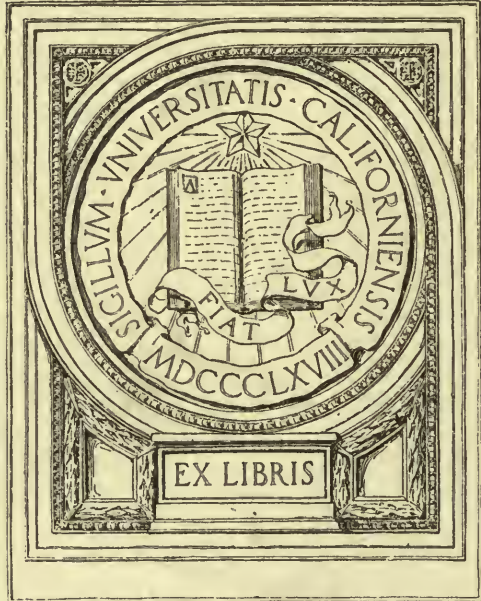
## RESISTANCE

*(From the Group by Ilex on the Arc de Triomphe.)*

LONDON: THE FIELD & QUEEN (HORACE COX) LTD., BREAM'S BUILDINGS, E.C.

PRICE ONE SHILLING.

GIFT OF



EX LIBRIS





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation

*The Field, The Farm, The Garden.*

# THE CRIMES OF GERMANY

---

---

Being an Illustrated Synopsis of the violations of  
International Law and of Humanity by the armed  
forces of the German Empire. Based on  
the Official Enquiries of Great Britain,  
France, Russia and Belgium.  
With a Preface by Sir Theodore A. Cook.

---

---

Being the Special Supplement issued by "THE FIELD" NEWSPAPER  
revised and brought up to date with extra illustrations.

---

---

LONDON:  
Published by  
THE FIELD & QUEEN (HORACE COX), LTD.,  
Bream's Buildings,  
E.C.

[1917?] ]

D. b. h. b.  
 G. 3 F. 5

# CONTENTS.

	PAGE		PAGE
LIST OF CONTENTS .. .. .	3	(2) The Tradesman of Hamburg .. .. .	49
LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS .. .. .	4	(3) Aerschot .. .. .	51
PREFACE BY SIR THEODORE COOK .. .. .	5	(4) Andenne .. .. .	51
<b>Chapter I.—CRIMES AGAINST WOMEN AND CHILDREN.</b>		<b>Chapter VIII.—CIVILIANS AS SCREENS.</b>	
(1) Across the Frontier .. .. .	13	(1) Evidence of Bryce Report .. .. .	52
(2) The March to Paris .. .. .	15	(2) Evidence of Belgian Commission .. .. .	55
(3) Hofstade .. .. .	16	<b>Chapter IX.—SUMMARY OF MURDERS</b> .. .. .	56
(4) Louvain, Malines, Aerschot .. .. .	19	<b>Chapter X.—KILLING AND MUTILATING THE WOUNDED.</b>	
<b>Chapter II.—OTHER CRIMES AGAINST WOMEN AND CHILDREN TESTIFIED BY GERMANS.</b>		(1) Evidence of Bryce Commission .. .. .	57
(1) German Letters and Diaries .. .. .	22	(2) French Official Reports .. .. .	59
(2) Outrages and Murders in Belgium .. .. .	23	(3) Belgian Official Reports .. .. .	63
<b>Chapter III.—OUTRAGES AGAINST CIVILIANS.</b>		(4) German Admissions .. .. .	65
(1) French Official Reports .. .. .	25	<b>Chapter XI.—RUSSIAN WOUNDED IN GERMAN HANDS</b> .. .. .	69
(2) Eye-Witnesses' Stories .. .. .	27	<b>Chapter XII.—GERMAN TREACHERY IN THE FIELD</b> .. .. .	73
<b>Chapter IV.—OTHER MURDERS ATTESTED BY GERMANS.</b>		<b>Chapter XIII.—PRISONERS IN GERMANY.</b>	
(1) The " Bath of Blood " .. .. .	31	(1) British, French and Russian .. .. .	77
(2) Dinant .. .. .	31	(2) Russian Captives .. .. .	85
(3) " Wiped Out " .. .. .	32	(3) Russians in Prison Camps .. .. .	87
<b>Chapter V.—BURNING, LOOT AND PILLAGE.</b>		(4) Typhus at Schneidemühle .. .. .	87
(1) Through German Eyes .. .. .	33	(5) Wittenburg Typhus Camp .. .. .	89
<b>Chapter VI.—BELGIAN OFFICIAL REPORTS OF MASSACRES.</b>		(6) Red Cross Prisoners .. .. .	91
(1) Tamines .. .. .	39	<b>Chapter XIV.—DEPORTATIONS INTO SLAVERY.</b>	
(2) Andenne .. .. .	39	(1) Russian Citizens .. .. .	92
(3) Dinant .. .. .	41	(2) Belgian Workmen .. .. .	93
(4) Hastières and Surice .. .. .	43	(3) Lille and District .. .. .	94
(5) Namur Province .. .. .	45	<b>Chapter XV.—GERMAN SUBMARINES</b> .. .. .	96
(6) Termonde .. .. .	47	<b>Chapter XVI.—POISONED WELLS</b> .. .. .	101
<b>Chapter VII.—GERMAN OFFICIAL ADMISSIONS OF MASSACRES IN BELGIUM.</b>		<b>Chapter XVII.—EDITH CAVELL AND CHARLES FRYATT</b> .. .. .	101
(1) Women and Children at Dinant .. .. .	49	<b>Chapter XVIII.—ZEPPELIN RAIDS AND BOMBARDMENTS</b> .. .. .	104

# ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE		PAGE
" Nach Paris " Medal .. .. .	4	Driving the Women of Louvain .. .. .	46
" Gott Strafe England " Medal .. .. .	4	Captured as a Spy .. .. .	46
Ruined Porch of Rheims Cathedral .. .. .	10	Victims of the Massacres at Andenne .. .. .	48
Louvain Library in 1913 .. .. .	12	More Victims of Massacres at Andenne .. .. .	52
Louvain Library Burnt by the Germans .. .. .	12	Ruins of St. Martin, Ypres .. .. .	56
Hall of Louvain University in 1913 .. .. .	16	A Stréet in Sermaize .. .. .	58
The Same Hall Burnt by the Germans .. .. .	16	Sermaize in Ruins .. .. .	60
Ypres Cloth Hall in 1913 .. .. .	18	Wreck of a Paris House .. .. .	62
Ypres Cloth Hall Burnt by the Germans .. .. .	18	Murder and Mutilation at Andenne .. .. .	64
Ruins of Gerbéviller .. .. .	22	Terrible Savagery at Andenne .. .. .	66
Massacre at Gerbéviller .. .. .	24	Calais House Wrecked .. .. .	68
Burnt Interior of Rheims Cathedral .. .. .	26	A Shattered Church .. .. .	68
Belgian Child Wounded .. .. .	28	A Wooden Saint .. .. .	70
A Civilian Prisoner .. .. .	28	Wooden Colossus of Hindenburg .. .. .	70
Clermont-en-Argonne : As it is To-day .. .. .	32	Bombs on " The Fortress of London " .. .. .	72
Portable Flame-Thrower .. .. .	34	More Attacks on " Fortified Places " .. .. .	74
Large Flame-Thrower .. .. .	34	Kultur in the Studio .. .. .	76
A Statue of Eve from Rheims .. .. .	36	Advertisement of Looted Furniture .. .. .	78
Effect of Fire on Rheims Cathedral .. .. .	36	Advertisement of Looted Horses .. .. .	78
Rheims Cathedral in 1913 .. .. .	38	" Successful Operation " by German War- ships .. .. .	80
Carving in Rheims Cathedral .. .. .	40	Medals for Zeppelins and for Scarborough 82, 97	
Ruins of Roof of Rheims Cathedral .. .. .	40	H.M.S. <i>Persia</i> .. .. .	102
President Poincaré's Château .. .. .	42	German Picture of the <i>Lusitania</i> .. .. .	102
A French Farm .. .. .	42	Statue of von Tirpitz .. .. .	102
Incendiary Pastilles .. .. .	44	Funeral of the Victims of the <i>Lusitania</i> .. .. .	105
General Lyautey's House .. .. .	44		



German silver medal inscribed "Nach Paris" on one side, with a portrait of General Von Kluck on the face. Sir Whitworth Wallis says: "The fool-fury holding the flaming brand possibly delineates unconsciously that Teutonic 'Kultur' with which we are now acquainted—if so, it must be reckoned one of the happiest designs on record." The medal, however, missed its purpose, as the designer, aspiring to the rank of a prophet, made it in anticipation of the fall of Paris.



A much sought after German medal struck to commemorate the submarine blockade of England, Feb. 18, 1915. It provides the first example of the famous phrase "Gott Strafe England."



## PREFACE.

*"Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils and the hold of every foul spirit and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird . . . her sins have reached unto heaven and God hath remembered her iniquities . . . for she saith in her heart I sit a queen and am no widow and shall see no sorrow. Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning and famine . . . and the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more . . . cinnamon and odours and ointments and frankincense and wine and oil and fine flour and wheat and beasts and sheep and horses and chariots and slaves AND THE SOULS OF MEN."*—Rev. xviii. 2, et seq.

SOME people are beginning to forget the "Belgian atrocities" of August and September, 1914. They do not realise that Germany has continued them—in one form or another—ever since. They do not understand that a nation convicted of such conduct cannot be given the consideration usually granted in such cases when the question of peace becomes practical; and they appreciate still less the influence which this conduct must have upon the terms of peace themselves. If German soldiers had kept their swords clean in a fair fight for the supremacy of Europe, or for anything else, we should have shaken hands with them when we had beaten them and have retained nothing but admiration for the greatest military effort the world has ever seen. This they have made impossible. For it is clear that the rules broken by Germany were made not so much to mitigate the horrors of war as to allow men who had fought out an issue to live together afterwards in peace. Germany's conduct must, therefore, have very far-reaching results. For the deliberate policy authorised by the Kaiser, framed by his General Staff, and carried out by his soldiers and sailors, the whole German nation must in the end be held responsible, and must in the end suffer penalties proportionate to its continued approval of that policy and its readiness to profit by it. Not only must we carefully safeguard peace by the same methods of force which Germany herself involved to shatter all covenants that bound her, but we cannot make peace at all until Germany is powerless to break it.

The Prime Minister has solemnly pledged Great Britain, with the full approval not only of the Empire but of the civilised world, to exact full reparation from all who have been responsible for these violations of civilised warfare. Among the worst are: von Bissing, in Brussels; Manteuffel, at Louvain; Bülow and Schönmann, at Andenne; Bayer, at Dinant; Böhn, at Sommerfeld and Termonde; Stenger, who signed the general order to kill the wounded; Nieher, at Wavre; Wittenstein, at Clermont-en-Argonne; Fossbender, at Lunéville; Tanner and Clauss, at Gerbéviller and Frambois; Schröder, at Compiègne; the Colonel of the 70th Regiment of Infantry, who mutilated their wounded by order; Major Kastendick (57th Infantry) and Captain Dültingen, who ordered two women and a child to be killed. There are many others, and the proof of their guilt will become more and more important as the close of active hostilities approaches. Those who urge this country to make peace proposals prematurely will belittle it. Germany herself will attempt in every possible way to deny and to obscure it. But the evidence against her is to be found not merely in the sworn statements of eye-witnesses and of her victims themselves, but in the signed letters and documents of her own soldiers. That evidence proves more than her guilt in certain cases or in a particular campaign. It proves her deliberate intention to incorporate these atrocious methods in all her subsequent wars and to menace the future peace and civilisation of the whole world with similar barbarities whenever she may think them necessary. Two other points deserve notice. The first is that Germany's complaints invariably allege serious breaches of international law on the part of other people, without the slightest hint that she proposes to observe the law herself. The second is that, though many opportunities have been given her to answer the accusations made against her, she has been careful to give no reply. Viscount Grey's offer that questions of maritime law

should be submitted to an American tribunal was rudely rejected. There was also the offer of the Belgian Bishops to the Catholic Episcopate of Germany and Austria for the full investigation of the whole question of the "Belgian Atrocities" by a joint committee under a neutral president. Nothing fairer could have been suggested. No clearer presumption of Germany's guilt could be adduced than her refusal to entertain the offer.

The cynical and immediate contempt shown by Germany for the Hague Conventions and other rules of civilised war has convinced everyone that the strict and continuous observance of such conventions in the future must obtain the sanction of such forcible measures as could be applied, when necessary, by the rest of the world, to the Germanic peoples or to any others who might wantonly violate the agreements of civilisation. That observance must clearly also be a matter of interest and honour in the future to every nation which has signed the Code. In other words, a strong and practically universal body of enlightened censure must be created, and maintained, against the deliberate policy which has abused the chivalry of war and destroyed the lives and property of innocent non-combatants both by land and sea. We must be protected against any possibility of its revival. Crimes such as Germany has committed have not merely broken the rules of the civil and military code; they have outraged the elemental instincts of humanity; they can neither be adequately punished nor permanently stopped by arms alone; their abolition must be the task of a higher type of international conscience which will not only reject German ideals from every civilised country, but will insist upon a clearer recognition of the fundamental rights and duties of the individual citizen within the boundaries of the Germanic Empires. It is almost incredible that among all those millions not a single voice has been able to raise a protest strong enough to turn their rulers from the deliberate policy of crime laid down in their official "War Book" and rigidly carried out by the strict orders of their officers.

For all the German-speaking races outside Prussia there will one day come a great awakening. Truth cannot be hidden. Just as they deceived the world with prattle about philosophy and Kultur for all the years during which they were secretly preparing the wholesale murder of Europe and European civilisation, so they have been deceived themselves as to the result of their ill-starred machinations, and as to the opinion of the world about their abominable methods. After all, they will discover it is not war, but peace, which is the normal life of other nations. After all, they will be made to realise that Truth, and not Lies, is the basis upon which international society must rest. The frightfulness of the modern Hun has effected nothing greater or more lasting than did the cruelties of Attila or the faggots of Alva in the Netherlands. Their Chancellors and their journalists may ask: "Is it the business of Germans to be guided by chatter about humanity and civilisation, or to go ahead roughly and ruthlessly?" But a greater Voice than any to which modern Germany has listened has said to her victims in Belgium, Serbia, and Poland: "I know thy works and tribulation and poverty. Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer. Behold the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried. Be thou faithful unto death and I will give thee a crown of life."

This book, which is chiefly compiled from material specially produced by the *Field* newspaper of January 29, 1916, and now brought up to date, is published at a time when the prolongation of the war may well necessitate a strengthening of resolution on the part of all the Allies; and its details inexorably show that we are fighting not for any temporary surcease from the troubles of war, nor for any territorial or commercial advantages, but for the permanent liberation of mankind from the terror of a blighting despotism that would continuously wither every possibility of happiness and development in the race. In their own way these pages, carefully compiled from officially-recorded testimony, are a contribution to the verdict of that history which the Imperial Chancellor of Germany has so frequently and dishonestly invoked; but they are primarily intended to rouse in some, to keep alive in all, of the inhabitants of Europe a realisation of the terrible fact that Germany fights not only against our armies and our cannon, but against those principles of mercy, of justice, and of honour which are deeply rooted in our souls. There is a tremendous force in the concentrated opprobrium of public condemnation which Germany has yet to learn. All those who believe the facts recorded here, and act on their convictions, must help to teach her. The Germans, as a nation, will probably never recognise the truth till they suffer a crushing defeat. But this war will not be ended by merely military or naval victories. We have not only to conquer our opponents in the field of battle. We have to abate their pride and malice, to change their cruel creed, to keep them rigidly outside the pale until they can be recognised as fit once more to mingle with the civilisation they have betrayed. The Hohenzollerns have, beyond all questions, broken the honour of the German Army and Navy, as they have broken the pledged word of Germany and of her rulers. The doom that they have made inevitable for themselves is far more bitter than any punishment their enemies could inflict. The weak reprisals of mankind are strengthless in comparison with the vengeance of the living God.

The Table of Contents will indicate to some degree the terrible nature of the crimes it is necessary

to expose: the outrages against women and children, the massacres of the civilian population, the deportations at Lille and elsewhere, the use of helpless creatures as screens to the German troops, the killing and mutilating of wounded and prisoners, the travesty of justice in such cases as Burgomaster Max, Edith Cavell, and Charles Fryatt, the poisoning of the wells in South Africa, the wholesale assassinations at sea by the sinking of such vessels as the *Lusitania*, the *Falaba*, and the *Ancona*. It is an atrocious catalogue, and the evidence supporting it can never be denied. In very many cases that evidence is drawn from letters and documents signed by Germans themselves. In others we have the actual words of the men and women who saw with their own eyes what they describe. The appalling nature of the testimony printed in the Appendix of the Bryce Report does not seem to have been so universally recognised as might have been expected. In these pages will be found several extracts (doubly corroborated since their publication) from this extraordinary volume which contained nothing but evidence that had been legally tested by trained and independent lawyers. If you come to think of it, no such human document as this has ever seen the light before. Artists like Zola or Flaubert or Maupassant never saw the horrors they described, never lived among them, never suffered, through them, the loss of all they held most dear. What they might have written, had it been so, we cannot tell. But it is certain that the greatest imaginative writer has never penned a picture so pathetic, so poignant, so unimaginably horrible in all its naked details, as is given in the simple words of these peasants and poor people of Belgium and North-Eastern France, who tell what they have seen and suffered. Never have the tortures inflicted upon whole populations been so faithfully recorded in the exact syllables of the victims themselves. And from the assassination of the Archduke's wife at Sarajevo to the shooting of a hospital nurse in Brussels, Prussia and her Allies have concentrated their cruelty upon women. Hundreds of women have been executed by Austria; thousands by Turkey in Armenia. Prussia must be proud of the docility of her friends in following her example. As the crowning horror of Edith Cavell's death was the cold calculation of judicial formalities from beginning to end, the hideous solemnity of its malignant legal procedure, so the blackest blot upon the German Army will ever be that soldiers were found who could deliberately carry out the settled policy prearranged at Potsdam by the General Staff. That policy was based upon the intention to terrify all resistance by one stupendous onslaught of brutality. It has had directly the opposite effect. It has consolidated every nerve and muscle in Russia, France, Italy, and England to avenge the wrongs of Belgium, Serbia, and Poland with their own. Germany will not merely be conquered as a foe in a fair fight; she will be condemned, sentenced, and executed as a dangerous criminal. For she has unquestionably exhibited the gratuitous manifestations of that degenerate vice which inevitably culminates in a lust for inflicting pain—and this is the thing unforgivable, the thing which makes men outcast from their kind.

One of the most notorious apologists for the perversion so fashionable in Berlin, Dr. Moll, was quite characteristically chosen by the Prussian Government to "explain" to the world the atrocities committed in Belgium during August and September, 1914. He told us, with the gravest cynicism, that the illiterate and excited population had been suffering from a "collective hallucination," which made them *imagine* their women had been tortured, their children murdered, their churches and houses blown to atoms! It is as good an apology as Prussia has ever offered. Let Dr. Moll be answered by that piteous exodus from Belgium, or from the whole of Serbia, which took place under circumstances of almost unimaginable horror and pathos as soon as the "collectively hallucinated" inhabitants realised that the Blonde Beast of Prussia was upon them. Yet even Dr. Moll's ravings are better than the lying excuse for the destruction of Belgium which the Kaiser himself cabled to President Wilson. The formal demand of the Belgian Episcopate for an inquiry was refused by the German Bishops. They knew they had no answer.

It might have been hoped that their Navy would at least have escaped, through some faint memory of the ancient chivalry of the sea, from the blacker stains which have for ever tarnished the good name of the German Army. But even this was not to be. As on land they collected the wounded, after Loos, and bombed them to death in a trench, so in the open sea, where no blockade obtained, no warning had been given, they shelled the helpless passengers of the *Ancona*, as they laughed at the drowning women of the *Falaba*, or fired on unarmed English sailors on a stranded submarine, just as they pistoled their own men whom our crews had tried to save. There is a bestial ferocity in this conduct of a war which cannot be forgotten—as the wounds of other wars were healed—when peace is made. And the astounding "explanations" afforded in each case by the German Government only prove that what might once have been thought the reckless action of a desperate moment was, in reality, the result of ingrained turpitude of character, working on previously-calculated methods. Fortunately, all such efforts have recoiled on Germany's own head. Her attempt to cut off our supplies by her submarine policy only forced us to pass the Order in Council of March, 1915. In exactly the same way her ruthless destruction of every craft she saw has only roused such a crusade against her that every man who can sail a yacht, or steer a steam launch, or beat up Channel in a trawler, is hot upon the trail of every German keel like any pack of

hounds after a fox. And so it is, too, with that shameful pretence about "starvation" which was her chief official pretext for the sinking of the *Lusitania*. France, at any rate, has not forgotten how the German armies starved out Paris. And when Germany herself begins again to whine about the terrible effects of war and famine, we shall remember the lie she spread abroad in the spring of 1915, and we shall give as little pity to her as she claimed in the December following, in her own Reichstag. Lies may succeed once; but "You cannot have it both ways," as our Foreign Office said upon a memorable occasion. The lying began in the first fortnight in that shameful pamphlet called *Truth about Germany*, in which a whole string of the most cynically shameless untruths were signed by men like Albert Ballin, Prince von Bülow, Dr. Dryander, Field-Marshal von der Goltz, von Gwinner (of the Deutsche Bank), Prince von Hatzfeldt, Prince Münster Dernburg, Max Warburg, Count Reventlow, and others who, by that act alone, have cut themselves off from decent society for ever. And they have gone on ever since. If you have been telling lies from July, 1914, to December, 1916, it will be difficult to get anybody to believe you—even if you speak the truth in 1917. There will even come a time when Germans themselves will refuse to believe their Prussian masters any more. Let us see what the Kaiser has been telling them: (1) With the help of God we shall take Paris in six weeks. (2) With God's approval we shall capture Calais. (3) With some assistance from ourselves God will crush Russia. (4) German soldiers shall be home in time for their Christmas dinner in 1914. (5) Nothing shall stop our complete conquest of everybody by October, 1915. (6) We only wait for the world to acknowledge its defeat in order to forgive it for daring to stand up to us. (7) All German expenses in the war will be paid by the indemnities levied from their vanquished foes. (8) We have got enough food and money to last for ever. (9) We sank the *Lusitania* because England's blockade was starving us out . . . and so forth. It may be supposed that for some time the mass of the German nation have been hypnotised by shibboleths about the Imperial unity which has for so long been their legitimate and praiseworthy ideal. Prussia seized on that ideal for her own sordid motives, and has debased it ever since by her unscrupulous tyranny and her utterly cynical untruths. But you cannot deceive the whole nation for ever. An awakening will come to Germans outside Prussia, though it will naturally take Germans longer than it has taken us to realise the facts. But in the end they will understand, as well as we do, that Germany's campaign of lies has been perhaps the most disgusting feature of her whole career in war. It began in her diplomacy during July, 1914; it continued with the false uniforms and the abuse of the white flag on her first battlefields; it has gone on ever since in her "official" reports of the fighting, in speeches, in proclamations, in the nauseous columns of a subsidised and blinded Press. It can be paralleled only by her almost equally odious system of universal espionage both before war began and afterwards. One of the ways in which Kultur is now being introduced to Belgium is by the establishment (November, 1915) of a "School of Spies" at Antwerp. Let it give all the world a lesson. Let it convince every other European country that no German can ever again be admitted to the hospitality of foreigners until this generation, at any rate, is purged of these poisonous parasites swarming from Berlin. Never again will we let Prince Henry, or any other Prince of Prussia, organise what he called "an automobile tour" through Great Britain, which he utilised to spy out the land of his unsuspecting hosts and learn the best ways to betray and harm them later on.

The dingy creed of Kultur and the Superman, that was bred by the brutality of the Prussian Junker out of the insanity of Nietzsche, has been the main factor in the development of German thought since 1870. It succeeded not only in making Prussians believe in their own invincibility, but also in expressing the same bombastic swaggering self-conceit upon all Germany. Its chief danger to the rest of the world lay in its loud and deliberate denial of that spiritual equality in manhood which is the true basis of all honourable citizenship. The Prussian soldier eagerly took up the cry; and he is admired by the whole German nation, not because he is as ready as any soldier in the history of war to sacrifice his life with the most reckless daring, but because he is ready and willing to kill everything living in his path, not merely other soldiers, but unarmed men, wounded men, old men, women, boys, girls, babies. . . . In Belgium he was not content with bayoneting babies; he laboriously chopped their little toys to pieces. He was not content with wrecking harmless artists' houses; he must scrawl over their pictures and leave them worthless. He was not content with shooting nuns and priests; he fired as many bullets as he could through the sacred vessels of the High Altar. And let us remember that when he had hacked a cripple with a sabre in time of peace he was specially saluted by his Crown Prince and loudly cheered by all his military newspapers; it is small wonder, after all, that he easily outdid that famous exploit under the stress of actual war. The discipline of the barrack-room had long ago stamped out of him all notions of personal character or individual dignity. He was not likely to admit their presence in other people.

This utter rejection of what the rest of the world means by Honour is the main explanation of that innate vulgarity of the Prussian spirit which is exhibited from the highest to the lowest, whether the Kaiser sneers at the "contemptible little army" of his enemy, while the heir to the Imperial throne steals plate and pictures from a peaceful country-house, or an officer sends off a burgomaster

and town councillors in a huddled cattle-truck across the Rhine, whilst the common soldier violates young women in the presence of their parents and crucifies the babies on barn doors. The Prussian does not seem to understand that civilised people neither do these things nor think the thoughts which make them possible. Judging apparently from herself, Prussia imagined that the rest of the world might be divided into bullies and cowards. But she has discovered that there are other categories. She has learnt also that the ferocity of her soldiers is powerless against them, and that civilised soldiers do not obey such orders. The Prussian, however, is lashed in the face by his own officers as often as he is kicked in the back, and has to obey from sheer terror. Though he has shown bravery as great as any men who ever fought, he gets no credit for it, for he attacks an impregnable position because swift death from a fair foe is much better than slow torture from his own superiors. He fears for himself the terrors he is so ready to inflict on others. Cruelty is always stupid, for real intelligence implies a store of human sympathy. And this is the reason why he can only attack in close formation, for, being deprived of his own soul when he puts on his uniform, he is inferior, man to man, to Russian, French, or English. This is also the reason why the Germans, as a nation, are bad sailors. It is not only because they are essentially land animals, like the larger pachyderms, but because they have had all the initiative driven out of them by Prussia. And this it is that makes them bad horsemen too. The cavalry was the only blot on the most tremendous military engine ever created.

These barbarous and brutal Prussians have complained that we have mobilised against them every race under the British Crown. But Prussia should find no cause to wonder if she were fought with every weapon from the flint-axe of the Stone Age to the hammered iron of the Zulu assegai, for she has deliberately sinned against the light; she has definitely proclaimed her denial of the Promise and the Record, the two ideas which even abandoned cannibals respect. And her pretext for starting this war showed her immediate iniquity as clearly as her methods in fighting it. Full-armed and confident of victory, Prussia stood waiting, in the summer of 1914, for the signal that should lead her on her way. It came with the murder of the Archduke and his wife. With all the grim solemnity of some hideous travesty of sacrament, she consecrated her campaign of crime at Sarajevo. She carried it on to the shooting of a hospital nurse by strict course of law at Brussels. And every step along that bloodstained path she took across her broken promises and the fragments of the treaties she had signed. From that path she can never turn until she reaches the precipice that is its fitting end.

The list of illustrations will in itself indicate certain social features of Kultur which are typical of what has just been said about its military manifestations. The damage the German Army have done to Rheims Cathedral and to innumerable other churches is so far from being accidental that it reflects precisely those racial views of "art" which have come naturally to the surface during the stress of passion induced by war. As usual, their official apologies only fix the guilt more deeply. To the rest of the world they say that the destruction of Rheims is no great matter, for they can build a better. But the Prussians' only art is war. The style they really admire will be clear from the vulgar and enormous wooden idols they have set up all over Germany of late, for the cultured inhabitants to cover with tenpenny nails—a reversion to atavistic savagery which is very notable. As a manifestation of art they remain unique, but in spirit they can be paralleled among the modern savage fetish-worshippers, or the prehistoric priests of evil in the ruined cities of Central America. Their medals are almost equally barbarous. One or two of the most typical are reproduced here. The naked witch astride her pale horse, waving the incendiary's torch, a characteristic anticipation of the fall of Paris; the sinking of the *Lusitania*; the Zeppelin raining death on English houses; the submarine medal, with its "Gott strafe England," the motto that inspired their equally childish "Hymn of Hate" to the derision of the rest of the world: all would long ago have slain the Huns with ridicule if their hides were not impervious to wholesome laughter. This attitude of theirs is due (and this is, perhaps, its worst feature) to the constant propaganda of the Prussian Government deliberately spread for over forty years, and acting on the mixture of brutality, feverish industry, low cunning, cringing to official power, and inordinate vanity of the *nouveau riche*, which now completes the pleasing picture of the pachydermatous Teuton. He might have become unpopular, if left to his own devices. But it is the fatal goad of Prussia which has driven him to become a public danger. The Kaiser's continuous familiarity with God has added the last touch to the repulsiveness of his Germans; for it is just the solemn pedantry of their wickedness, the revolting seriousness with which they sin, that every civilised beholder finds most dreadful in this appalling picture of a nation lost in homicidal madness. When the German guns were battering the Cloth Hall of Ypres, the University of Louvain, or the Cathedral of Rheims, it was not merely the destruction of cherished ancient monuments, never to be replaced, that men beheld; they saw the last frenzied effort of the Hun to slay the soul of Europe, to scale once more those unseen barriers which no mortal hands had raised, to beat once more in vain against the Citadel from which the Prince of Darkness shall be cast out for ever.

THEODORE A. COOK.



#### THE MARK OF THE HUNS.

Detail of the north portal on the west front of Rheims Cathedral showing damage wrought to some of the finest statuary by shells and fire. The sculpture and glass were the glory of Rheims, the thirteenth century craftsmen devoting their lives to its embellishment. The glass has been shattered and scores, if not hundreds, of statues ruined, each of which was a masterpiece in itself. The stained glass may be replaced by the finest modern craftsmanship can produce, the statues patched up and figures renewed, but modern skill cannot make up for the finest mediæval art, and Rheims will never be the same again. *The Architectural Review*, in conclusion to a splendid article, remarks: "Heune long ago foretold that the Huns should again traverse the land and hammer to bits the Gothic cathedrals, and the fearful truth of that prophecy is now borne down upon us as we contemplate the glory that was Rheims."

# THE Crimes of the German Army.

## I.—CRIMES AGAINST CHILDREN AND WOMEN.

THESE PARAGRAPHS of evidence are given as nearly as possible in the words of the witness, unaltered and with no addition. Nothing has been omitted from them unless it was irrelevant, or hearsay statement, or unless it has been necessary in order to conceal the identity of the witness. Many witnesses hesitated to speak lest what they said, if it should be published, might involve their friends or relatives at home in danger.

For this reason names have been omitted; but the status of the witness is indicated in each case. The numbers and initials printed by the side are those of the Bryce Commission's report of evidence, and are inserted here to enable reference to be made to the Report.

In every case the names and descriptions of the witnesses are given in the original depositions, which remain in the custody of the Home Department, where they will be available for reference at the close of the war.

### THE GERMANS CROSS THE FRONTIER.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (A 22).

We were passing the flying ground outside Liège at Ans when I saw a woman, apparently of middle age, perhaps 28 to 30 years old, stark naked, tied to a tree. At her feet were two little children about three or four years old. All three were dead. I believe the woman had one of her breasts cut off, but I cannot be sure of this. Her whole bosom was covered with blood and her body was covered with blood and black marks. Both children had been killed by what appeared to be bayonet wounds. The woman's clothes were lying on the grass, thrown all about the place. I was near J. B. at the moment we found the woman. I told Corporal V. what I had seen later on. I was marching on the outside of the patrol, on grass land, B. being next to me and the corporal closest to the regiment. J. B. cut the cords which held the woman up by stabbing them with his bayonet. The body fell, and we left it there.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 107), HAECHT.

On September 10th we came to the village of Haecht, and I and some others were sent out as a patrol; we passed a river and came to a farmhouse. On the door of the farm I saw a child—two or three years old—nailed to the door by its hands and feet. It was clothed and quite dead. There was no wound of any sort on the body; the face was horribly drawn with pain. In the garden of the same house I saw the body of another child, a little girl of five or six; she had been shot in the forehead:

All the villagers had fled, and had not yet returned although the Germans had been driven back.

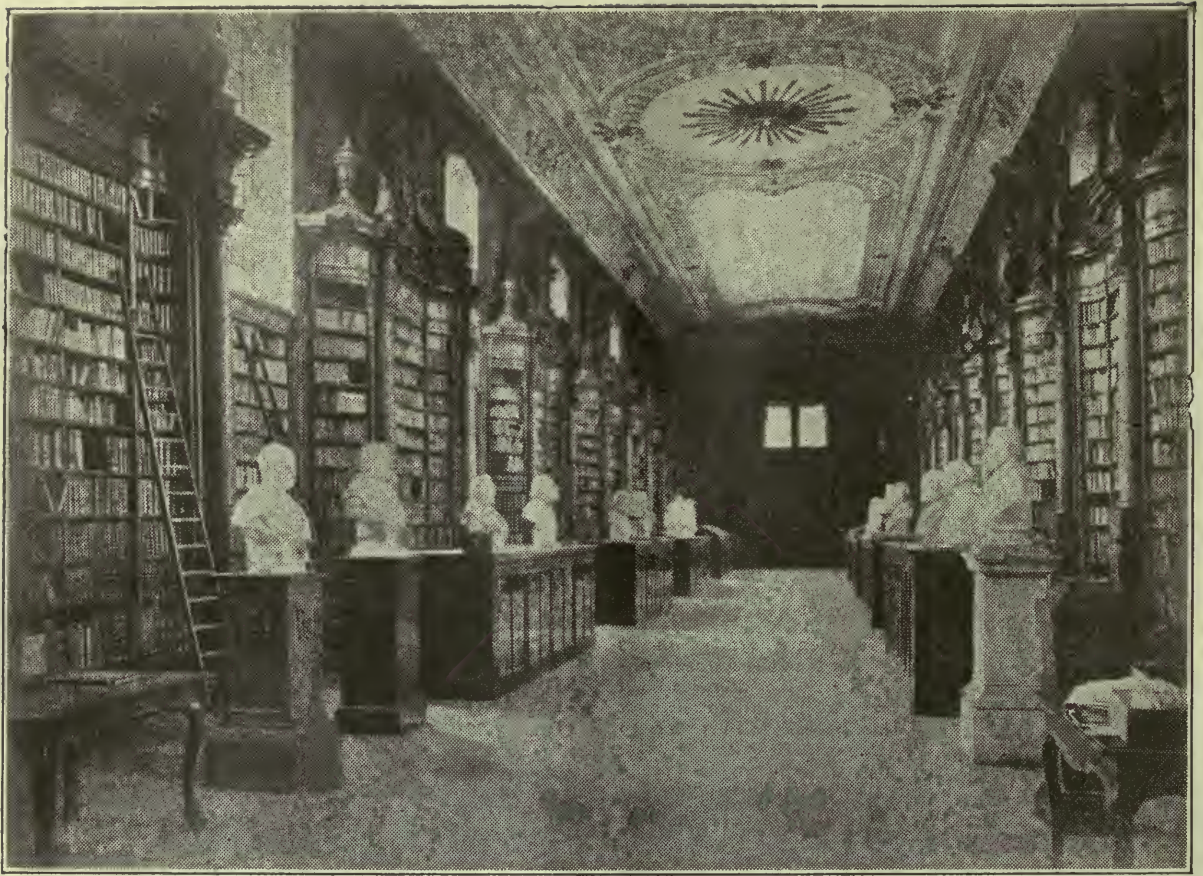
BELGIAN PLASTERER (D 130).

On the 23rd August I went out with two friends (names given) to see what we could see. About three hours out of Malines we were taken prisoners by a German patrol—an officer and six men—and marched off into a little wood of saplings where was a house. The officer spoke Flemish. He knocked at the door; the peasant did not come. The officer ordered the soldiers to break down the door, which two of them did. The peasant came and asked what they were doing. The officer said he had not come quickly enough and that they had "trained up" plenty of others. His hands were tied behind his back and he was shot at once without a moment's delay. The wife came out with a little sucking child. She put the child down and sprang at the Germans like a lioness. She clawed their faces. One of the soldiers took his rifle and struck her a tremendous blow with the butt on the head. She fell dead. Another took out his bayonet and fixed it and thrust it through the child. He then put his rifle across his shoulder with the child upon it. Its little arms stretched out once or twice. The officer ordered the house to be set on fire, and straw was obtained and it was done. The man and his wife and the child were thrown on the top of the straw.

There were about 40 other peasant prisoners there also, and the officer said, "I am doing this as a lesson and example to you. When a German tells you to do something the next time you will move more quickly." The regiment of Germans was the regiment of Hussars with cross-bones and a death's head on the cap.

MARRIED WOMAN (D 4), BELGIUM.

I saw eight German soldiers. They came round a corner into the street in which I was walking with my husband and came towards us. They were drunk. They were singing and making a lot of noise and dancing about. They were in grey uniforms. As the German soldiers came along the street I saw a small child, whether boy or girl I could not see, come out of a house. The child was about two years of age. The child came into the middle of the street so as to be in the way of the soldiers. The soldiers were walking in twos. The first line of two passed the child; one of the second line, the man on the left, stepped aside and drove his bayonet with both hands into the child's stomach, lifting the child into the air on his bayonet and carrying it away on his bayonet, he and his comrades still singing. I could see the man for about 200 yards, still carrying the child on his bayonet. Then the soldiers were hidden by a curve in the street. The child screamed when the soldier stuck it with his bayonet, but not afterwards.



AN INTERIOR OF THE LIBRARY OF LOUVAIN UNIVERSITY BEFORE THE ARRIVAL  
OF THE GERMAN TROOPS.

Its destruction afforded conclusive proof of the high ideals of German culture. Photograph by courtesy of *La Belgique Nouvelle*.



THE SAME INTERIOR OF LOUVAIN LIBRARY AFTER THE FIRE.

According to Professor Léon Van Der Essen, of Louvain University, the precious contents of the library were consumed in the flames. Photograph by courtesy of *La Belgique Nouvelle*.



**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 80), SEMPST.**

We were in the village of Sempst, from which the Germans had retired, and it was my duty, as being the leader of the patrol, to go into the houses to see that there were no Germans left behind. I and one of my soldiers went into one of the village houses. On entering there was nothing to be remarked, nor did I notice anything upstairs. I continued my researches into the backyard, meaning to look through the stables. On opening the back door of the house I saw four Germans climbing over the wall and trying to escape. Three got away and the fourth I shot dead. Lying on the ground I found four children, three little girls and a boy. Each had its hands cut. They were dying, but not quite dead. Their hands still hung to their arms by the skin. There was blood all round on the ground. There was no one with the children, either in the yard or in the house. We left the house; it was impossible to do anything for the children. That all took place in the last house of the village.

**POST OFFICE OFFICIAL (D 85), WEERDE.**

In the same village (Weerde) I saw two little children (girls) three or four years old, standing beside the road with a woman who appeared to be their mother. As the Germans came up two of them drove their bayonets through the bodies of these two children, killing them.

Close beside the road there was a small farm homestead burning, and the bodies of the two children were pitched into the flames by the soldiers who killed them; they tossed them in with their bayonets. It was a different soldier who killed each child. The same thing was done by each, one killing one child and one the other. I saw no commissioned officer present. The mother was crying—the soldiers pushing her away. I did not think she was hurt. Other people saw this happen, but they are strangers to me and I cannot give their names. This village was about half-an-hour's walk from Sempst—to the east of it.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 88), EPEGHEM.**

At Epegghem, in the middle of September (I cannot remember the date because I have lost my field notebook), I saw the dead body of a child of about two years of age outside the village near the road to Vilvorde. A German lance, similar to those used by Uhlans and other German cavalry, was in the child's body, and was stuck into the ground through the body. The wound was still bleeding. The Germans had vacated the village about half an hour earlier, falling back before strong Belgian patrols, cavalry and foot. I removed the lance from the child's body and gave it to a cavalry patrol attached to our First Division who had lost his weapon.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 94), BOORT-MEERBEEK.**

I and my two comrades were at the spot where the three crosses are marked. We saw a German soldier come out of the wood and fire three separate times at a little girl of from four to six years of age who was at the point marked A. Seeing that he failed to hit the child by firing at her and that she stood quite still, he ran at her and bayoneted her in the stomach. At the sight of this we rushed up, and the German soldier threw up his hands as a sign of surrender, but I killed him with the butt end of my rifle. With the exception of the little girl there was no one in the neighbourhood.

**ON THE MARCH TO PARIS.****BRITISH SOLDIER (L 18) (FRANCE).**

One day at the beginning of September on the retreat from Mons we passed through a small village. There was a bridge and waterfalls just before we got into the village. I do not know the name of the village. The regiment halted for about 10 minutes and I went into a

kind of back place which we used as a latrine. It was a sort of yard behind houses and was filled with rubbish. On the ground were two boys' bodies. One was about eight and the other would be five or six. The bodies were lying together. The hands had been cut off both bodies. The stumps were torn and the blood was black. It was in the afternoon that I saw them. It was not yet dusk. The hands were not lying near. There was blood on the ground near where each stump had been lying. I did not touch the bodies nor examine them to see if there were other wounds. In the yard about four feet away from the other bodies was the body of a girl of about 10 years old. She had a jagged wound in the stomach. It looked like a bayonet wound. She was fully dressed. There was a lot of blood by the girl's body. This blood was dry and black. Her clothes were saturated in blood.

**BRITISH NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER (L 2),  
SOISSONS, FRANCE.**

We were searching the houses for German stragglers. The first house in the village I entered with a section was a farmhouse; it seemed to belong to a well-to-do man. We found in it the corpses of a man 45-50, dressed as a farmer, the woman of about 40, and two girls, one aged 18 and one 13, and a boy about eight. They were all lying in the kitchen shot, and all fell against the same wall—hay and straw was scattered over the floors—some German writing was on the gate. Two old men and a woman stated to us through the interpreter (a French soldier attached to us) that they had been shot as an example if anyone else showed any resistance in refusing to give supplies.

**BRITISH NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER (L 3),  
MARNE, FRANCE.**

We were searching a village for a patrol of Uhlans at 3.30 p.m.—a small village of about 50 houses—we found them in a house; about 10 got outside, but we did not let them get to their horses and we killed them all. On the ground floor in the front room—it was a house of about six rooms—there were ten Uhlans, who immediately put up their hands, and we took them prisoners. I sent them outside in charge of my men. I searched the house; everything was in disorder. On the floor in the corner near the fireplace I saw two women and two children, the ages of the former apparently about 30 and 25. One was dead, the one I judged to be the elder. Her left arm had been cut off just below the elbow. The floor was covered with blood. I think she had bled to death. I felt her other pulse at once. I have been trained as a hospital attendant before I went into the reserve. She was quite dead, but not yet quite cold. Her clothing was disarranged, but may have been because she was rolling about in pain. The house had farm buildings attached to it, so I presume they were of the farmer class. I did not examine her for any other wound, as I was satisfied she had died of haemorrhage. The younger woman was just alive, but quite unconscious. Her right leg had been cut off above the knee. As she was on the point of death I could not summon assistance quickly enough to stop the bleeding even; I was sure she was beyond assistance then. There were two little children, a boy about four or five and a girl of about six or seven. The boy's left hand was cut off at the wrist and the girl's right hand at the same place.

**BRITISH SOLDIER (L 18), RETREAT FROM MONS.**

I remember we put up for that night at Chailvet. I also remember we retreated further to Braisne. I should say it was somewhere along the line of this retreat we marched through a village with a very wide street. It was just an ordinary street. There was nothing else to distinguish it. The Uhlans must have been through it. We saw women and children lying dead. There were about ten women and six or seven little children. One or two of the bodies of the women had no heads. The

children had not been cut up. They were just lying dead in different places, some by the side of the women. It was a terrible sight, which I shall not forget. I was with my platoon all the time. I remember we said to one another we would like to stick the Germans with the bayonet.

**BRITISH SUBJECT (A 35), HERMÉE.**

Towards the end of August a woman brought a child to the factory where I was working, which had been turned into a hospital. I saw the child myself, and he had been severely wounded with some sharp instrument which was said to be a bayonet. He had been cut right up the stomach. The woman who brought the child was not the mother. She had picked up the child at a village named Heure le Romain, and she told me that the mother of this child had been killed by the German soldiers while the baby was in her arms, and at the same time her father-in-law and her husband had been killed. The child was 5½ months old. I know this because I myself saw the death certificate. The woman who brought the boy to the hospital used to bring him every morning for treatment, and the German soldiers who were there used to keep her waiting at least half an hour before they would let her take the child to the doctor. This happened every morning. I myself protested against this treatment, and told them that it was their fellow soldiers who had themselves killed the baby's father and mother and injured the child. The baby died about ten days after it was first brought to the hospital. I drew out the rough copy of the death certificate for the doctor to sign.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (C 43).**

I was serving with my regiment between Aerschot and Gelrode. We had been engaged with the Germans for four days, at the end of which the Germans marched into Aerschot. This was about the sixth week of the war. On the first day of this engagement—it was a Wednesday—I and 20 others of my regiment were acting as an advance guard. We were marching towards Gelrode from Aerschot along the road. At 6.30 in the evening, when we were about seven or eight minutes from Gelrode, I saw a beech tree about 60 feet high. It was standing at the side of the road. I saw a woman about 30 hanging from a branch on the road side. A rope was round her neck, and her feet were about 12 inches off the ground. Under her feet was a lot of blood. We passed by in the middle of the road, but the corporal in charge told us to go on. A hundred yards past the tree we were met by a number of villagers, who told us that the woman had been bayoneted and hung by the Germans at 2.30 on the previous day. We did not stop because we could see quite well that the woman was dead.

**BELGIAN REFUGEE (B 15).**

The Germans compelled men of the town to help in digging a grave in the public square for the killed. The Christian Brothers and the curé of the Church of St. Martin had to help to dig. The bodies were put in one on top of another. While this was being done that afternoon I saw for the first time the bodies of my wife and child. My wife's body had a stab in the head and also one in the breast at the left side. My little girl had a stab in the neck. I saw also the body of the curé of the Church of Les Alloux. His ears and one arm were cut and nearly severed from the body. Amongst those who had been shot down the day before was my nephew, the son of my sister-in-law, 16 years of age.

**MARRIED WOMAN (B 14), TAMINES.**

Tamines was occupied by the Germans in the first fortnight of August, 1914. On or about the 15th or 16th August I saw a German soldier kill a little Belgian boy of about 15 years of age who was walking on the aforesaid green. The little boy was killed by a rifle bullet. As

far as I could see the boy was doing no harm to anyone. I do not know the boy's name.

On some date between the 15th and 20th August I saw about 20 German soldiers, together with an officer, on the aforesaid green. A little girl and her two little brothers came and looked at the said soldiers. I then saw those soldiers kill her and her two little brothers. The girl was killed by being shot through the ear. These three children, whose ages were 8, 12 and 15, were no relations of mine or my husband, but they were well known to me as inhabitants of Tamines.

**MARRIED WOMAN (E 10), AERSCHOT.**

We begged for pity, but they answered that there was no pity for anyone. They did not say why or that their soldiers had been shot at. So far as I know no one in Rodenburg shot at the Germans. I am certain no one had any weapons. They then pulled and pushed us up the stairs and into the street. They did not use their bayonets. When we got into the street other German soldiers fired at us. I was carrying a child in my arms, and a bullet passed through my left hand and my child's left arm.

**CORPORAL IN BELGIAN ARMY (C 50), TREMELOOS.**

In Tremeloos, the beginning of October, I and four others entered a house which had been half destroyed. In the cellar we found a man and a woman dead. The blood was still flowing. They appeared to have been beaten and kicked to death. I saw no bayonet wounds. The cellar was intact, so they had not been killed there by falling masonry. By their side was a little girl dressed. Both hands had been cut off and were on the floor. She was still alive but could not speak. She was about seven years old. We took her to the ambulance, but she died.

**AT HOFSTADE.**

**BELGIAN REFUGEE (D 12), HOFSTADE.**

At Hofstade, close to Malines, in a house into which I went to see if there were any wounded wanting help, I saw in a room a little boy about 12 years of age apparently on his knees pleading for help, with his hands clasped, and just at his heart was a bayonet wound. The little fellow was quite dead and cold. The wound was quite visible, and undoubtedly caused by a bayonet thrust.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 25), HOFSTADE.**

I was at Hofstade, the Germans were retreating, we were advancing near the headquarters of the Gendarmerie. I saw a woman about 45 years old and a boy of about nine who had been struck with a bayonet several times, both in the face and in the body. Both the boy's hands were cut off at the wrist, he was kneeling on the ground, one hand cut off was on the ground, the other hanging by a bit of skin.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 36), HOFSTADE.**

I was in the fight at Malines, and after we had driven the Germans out of Hofstade on August 25th I went with an artilleryman of our army, whose name I did not know, to find his parents who lived in Hofstade. All the houses were burning except the one in which this man's parents lived.

The door of the house was locked, and he tried to open it, but could not, and he forced it. There would be quite 50 of us who were standing round, because we were surprised that the house should not have been burned down like the rest.

On forcing the door we saw lying on the floor of the room into which it opened the dead bodies of a man and woman, a boy and girl, whom the artilleryman told us were his father and mother and brother and sister.

Each of them had both feet cut off just above the ankle and both hands just above the wrist. The poor boy appeared to be driven mad by the sight, because he rushed straight off, took one of the horses from his gun, and rode in the direction of the German lines. None of us ever saw him again.

**SERGEANT-MAJOR IN BELGIAN ARMY (D 42), HOFSTADE**

About 25th August, during the battle of Hofstade, I saw a boy of about seven nailed against a door with a German bayonet through the chest. All my company saw this.

At the same time in the burning houses we found people burning. I cannot say if they were killed before burning. They were dead when we arrived. About 10th September I was doing patrol duty in the village of Wespelaar. We were four together. We entered a house in the street in order to fire on some Germans in a house on the other side of the street about 100 yards off. One of them thrust a child of about 10 months, naked, stuck on the point of his bayonet, through the window of the first storey.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 47), HOFSTADE.**

Between the 20th and the 25th August I saw in a house at Hofstade three children with their hands cut off. (This was about 7 o'clock in the morning.) In the same house I saw a woman and a man, whom I supposed to be the parents of the children, hanged upon a beam in the old house in which they lived. At the time I was with the soldiers of the 3rd Regiment. The German soldiers had arrived in the village between five and half-past in the morning, and they were driven out about 7 a.m.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 49), HOFSTADE.**

I was at Hofstade on August 25th. After the Germans had retreated I and my companions were ordered to search the houses for Germans. In one house I went into I heard cries coming from an outhouse (*cabinet*). I went to see what it was. I found a woman of about 30 and two children who were down the *cabinet*. The children were in the woman's arms; one was dead, apparently asphyxiated. Boards had been laid over the hole and bricks placed on the top—a large number of stones and bricks. She could not have got out because of the weight on top. She was buried nearly up to her shoulders. She said the Germans had put her there. The woman's husband was a soldier; she and the children were alone in the house.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 104), DUFFEL.**

At a place called Duffel I saw the body of a child about seven years of age whose head had been severed from her body. The head lay about three yards away. The child was dressed. I was in the Red Cross motor-car at the time, and did not then get out of it, but I saw the child quite easily from the car. My companions also saw it.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 105), HAECHT.**

After the Belgian troops had been fighting at Haecht on the 26th August I saw the body of a little child aged about three years, whose stomach had been cut open by a bayonet near a place called Boort Meerbeek, lying close to a house. The people at the village told me that the child had been killed in its mother's arms. I did not see the mother. The Germans had previously been in occupation of the village.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 117), CAPELLE-AU-BOIS.**

About the middle of September I was at Capelle-au-Bois. My battalion was on outpost duty. I saw a fire in an adjoining village, and heard a cart coming along the road about 800 metres away. I saw a German officer go forward and stop the cart. We were few in number, so

could not go close, the Germans being in greater force. In this cart there was a manservant and two children—boy about seven and girl about six; behind this cart was another cart, in which was a lady and about four children. The first cart not stopping at once, the Germans shot the horse. The two children in the first cart stood up. The Germans then stopped the second cart. The boy got down from the first cart, the mother (?) got down from the second cart and spoke to the officer. He pushed her away. The soldiers shot the boy—five or six shots fired together. The little girl in the cart was killed by the same shots. The mother picked up the dead bodies, put them in the second cart, and drove into the Belgian lines. I saw the bodies in the cart in our lines.

**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 118), NIEUWENRODE.**

In the beginning of September, about 11 a.m., I was in command of a small post about 200 yards in advance of my company. This was close to Nieuwenrode. The civilian inhabitants were turned out of there by the Germans. We saw them going off in carts. One cart came towards us with a man, a woman, and two children, a boy and a girl. The Germans fired on them; I mean a small advance post did so. The boy was shot through the head: he was about 10 years old. The little girl was shot in the cheek. The Germans—*i.e.*, the outpost—came out of the building they were in, and one pulled the girl by the hair from the cart and threw her on the ground. The man in charge stamped on the child's face, and, as the parents told us after, called her a "Belgian brute." The child was killed. The parents brought both children into our lines. There were two other carts (with civilians) in the road at the same time, and I believe two others were wounded, two men, but I did not see them close. When the Germans fired we were about 800 yards away. The girl was about nine years old. I do not know the names of the men with me. The children were taken to the Civil Hospital of Willebroeck; where all the company saw them.

**BELGIAN REFUGEE (E 27), LOUVAIN.**

In the afternoon 20th August the road was almost blocked with civilian refugees coming into Brussels from the direction of Louvain. I saw a party of about 50 Uhlans approaching, and with the other members of the Garde Civique I hid my rifle and tunic. I was thus able to see the conduct of the Uhlans without being recognised by them as a combatant. The Uhlans were pricking the refugees with their lances to make them walk more quickly. They were doing this to women both old and young. I saw one of the Uhlans pricking a young woman who had four or five children walking by her side. An old woman, evidently the mother of this woman, was being prodded with his lance by a Uhlan to make her walk faster. This caused the younger woman to turn round and shout something to the Uhlan, which I was unable to hear. The Uhlan then deliberately plunged his lance into one of the children, a little girl of seven or eight years old. The young woman screamed out, "My child is dead!" and several others screamed, which caused the crowd to become infuriated. The Uhlans then charged into the people, scattering them in all directions, and I saw no more.

**BELGIAN REFUGEE (A 12), MICHÉROUX.**

From one of the cottages at Michéroux a woman came out with a baby in her arms, and a German soldier snatched it from her and dashed it to the ground, killing it then and there.

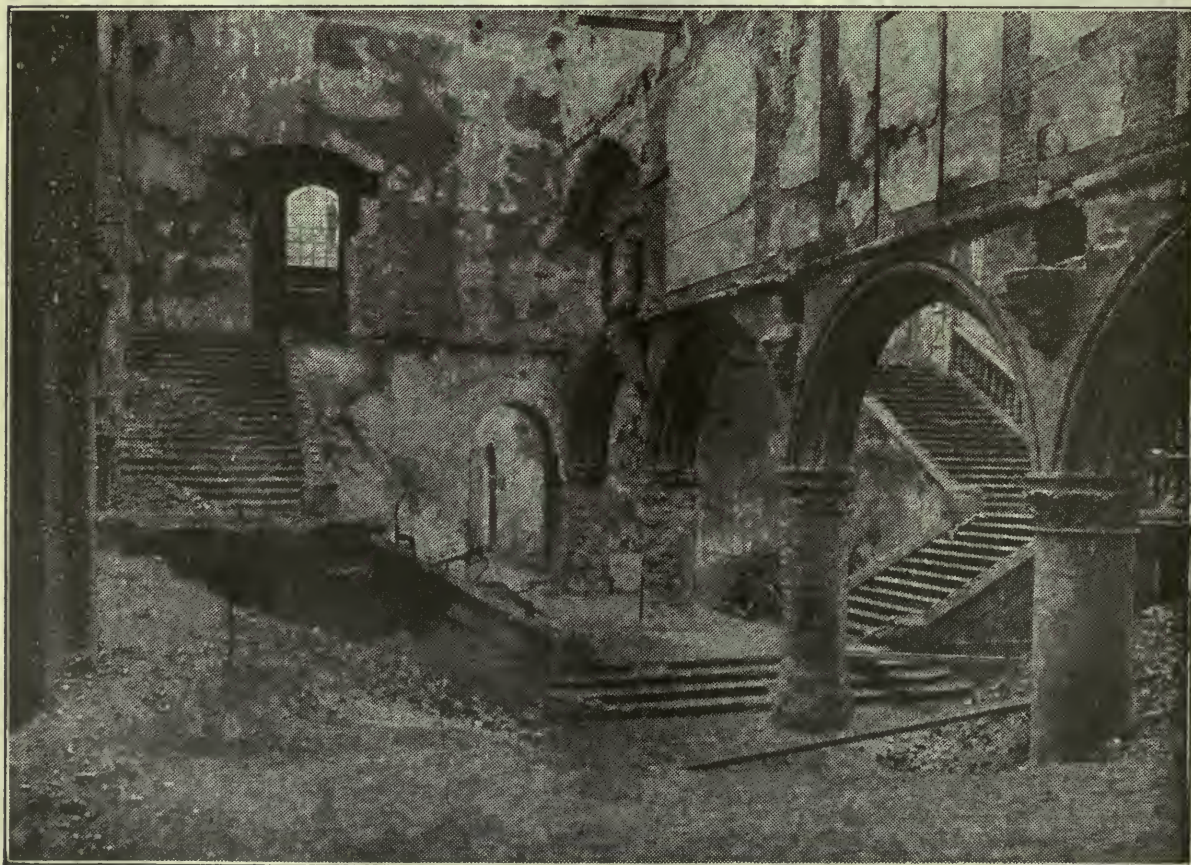
**BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 10).**

In the first house we entered—the first house on our right—we found the dead bodies of a man and two women. The man had been bayoneted in the forehead. One of the women had been bayoneted in the stomach. She was about 45 years of age. The other woman was about 20



LOUVAIN UNIVERSITY.

The Salle des Pas Perdus and Stairway leading to the Library. Photograph by kind permission of *La Belgique Nouvelle*.



LOUVAIN UNIVERSITY.

The Ancient Hall and Stairway after the fire. An attempt has been made to prove that Louvain is not badly damaged. A German report has it that "only between one-fifth and one-sixth of Louvain is in ruins." Cardinal Mercier gave the proportion as one-third and the houses burnt in town and suburbs as 1,823. Photograph by courtesy of *La Belgique Nouvelle*.

**LOUVAIN, MALINES, AERSCHOT.**

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 40).

When my regiment was following up the Germans in their retreat from Louvain to Malines I saw in different places on the roadside the bodies of two women naked from the waist upwards with one breast hacked off, and the bodies of dead children (about six in number), some with one foot, some with both hacked off.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 74).

At the entrance of the village of Sempst we were close to a farm. It was about 2 p.m. The farmhouse was on fire. The body of the farmer, an old man, was lying there, the head severed from his body, and lying some distance, 3 metres or so, off. Two sons, aged about 35 to 40, were lying dead also of gunshot wounds. The wife of one had her whole left breast cut away and was covered with blood, but was still alive. Leaning against the wall on some straw, she told us that the German Uhlans, six of them, had come into the house, and one of them said, "You have some Belgian soldiers hidden here," and she naturally replied, "No, there are none." Instantly he struck her, cutting off the whole of the left breast. She did not say it was a blow of a sword, but I think it was. She spoke Flemish, which I understand a little. She was very faint, having lost much blood, which was still flowing. She also said that they had sent up her little son, of some eight years old, to look in the loft, to see if there were any Belgians hidden in the straw, and pulled away the ladder and set the house on fire. It was about 22 to 25 feet from the door or window of the loft to the ground, and too high for him to jump down, and he must have been burned to death in the straw which was there.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (K 33).

Some time in October I was serving with my regiment at Melle, which is a village near Ghent. The Germans had occupied the village for a few hours. We drove them out, and they afterwards retook it. They drove us out again and we retook it, and afterwards the Germans again retook the village. During the second period of our occupation I saw eight Germans surrounding a woman with a child about one and a-half years old in her arms. One of the Germans, who appeared to be drunk, stabbed the child with his bayonet. The woman had her hair loose defending her child, and others seized her by the hair and dragged her over the ground. A man who was standing by got hold of the child. We then captured the eight Germans. The man, woman, and child had apparently been flying from the Germans. I did not see the man, woman, and child again. I think the child was killed.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (C 36).

I went with Adjutant de N. and 20 soldiers to Aerschot. The first thing we saw was the body of a young girl of about 18 to 20, absolutely naked, with her abdomen cut open. Her body was also covered with bruises, showing that she had made a struggle. She was lying close to a ditch near to Aerschot.

About a kilometre further I saw the body of a little boy, aged eight or nine, with his head completely cut off. The head was some distance from the trunk.

years old. She had a bayonet wound in the head and her legs had been cut almost off. The whole room was covered in blood. The bodies of the two women were lying side by side and that of the man a little apart. We entered another house further on, on the same side of the road. In the downstairs room was a hanging lamp, and a boy of about 10 years of age was hanging to it by a piece of string. The string was round his neck. He had a bayonet wound in the stomach. There was a pool of blood under the body. The blood had dried, I think. I did not touch any of these four bodies.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 39).

A little later, close to a bridge over the river leading to Hofstade, we found a woman dead and covered with blood. Two peasants and a priest were there. They told us she had been killed with the bayonet; she was pregnant. I did not see the wounds myself. In the afternoon in the village of Hofstade we went into the blacksmith's shop. I was with my company then. The blacksmith was dead, his hands were cut off and lying by the anvil. His wrists were tied together in front of him; his chest had been thrust through with the bayonet.

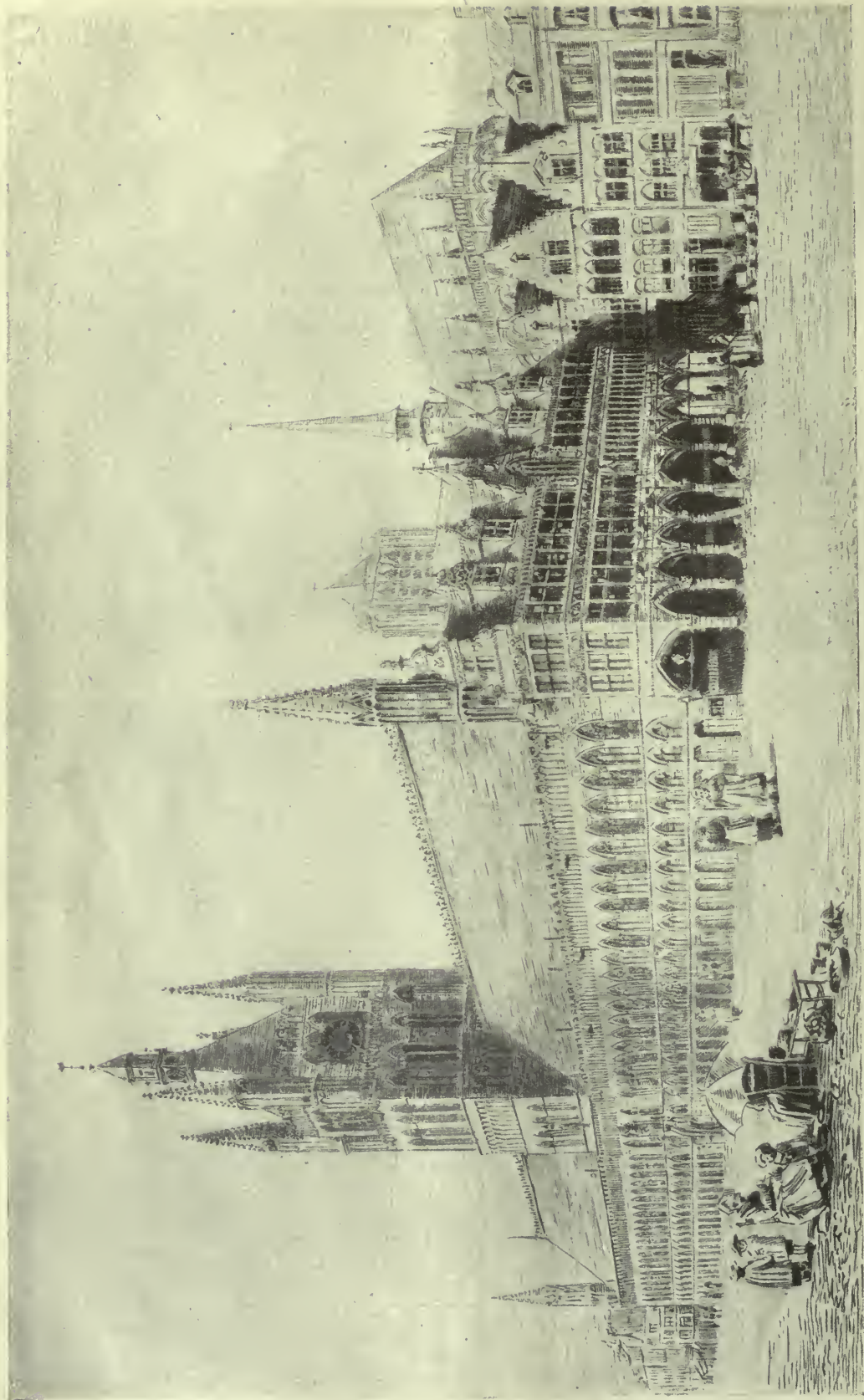
Later still the same afternoon we were examining all the lanes of the village (Hofstade). I and two or three others found in one house a child, a boy about 10, on his knees and leaning against the wall. His hands were still joined as if asking for mercy. A bayonet had been thrust through his chest.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (C 38).

About the 11th or 12th of September at Aerschot we were fighting the Germans, and women and children were in the road trying to get back to their homes. After our troops had pushed the Germans forward, the Germans deliberately fired beyond us at four women, a child of 11 or 12 years of age, an infant of six months (about), and four other children who were clinging to their mothers' skirts. The infant was in its mother's arms, and was riddled with shot, which passed through into the mother's body. While she was trying to crawl into safety on her knees the Germans still fired at her until she died. At a village called Putte, between Lierre and Malines, my patrol (myself and four men) came to a farmhouse. We had a sous-officier with us, who was killed an hour later. The door of the farmhouse was pushed back against the wall, and we found the dead body of a girl apparently 18 years of age, evidently some time dead. Her arms were nailed to the door in extended fashion, the front part of her dress torn away, and her left breast half cut away, and numerous other bayonet wounds on the chest, some piercing through to the back. The sight was so awful we dare not look much, and covered her over, having extracted the nails, and laid her on the ground, covering her with straw.

BRITISH SUBJECT (F 13).

I saw at the Wetteren Hospital, after the battle of Alost, about the 15th September, a girl of 11 years of age, from Alost, with 17 bayonet thrusts in the back. I saw the wounds, and she was practically flayed. The girl was at the point of death. Mr. G. was with me and can corroborate me as to this and also as to the other facts.



FORMER APPEARANCE OF THE CLOTH HALL.

Ypres has suffered from persistent and systematic bombardment, and contains a mass of ruins. Mr. Arnold Bennett, in his splendid description of the town, remarks that it is entitled to rank as the very symbol of German achievement in Belgium. In proportion to their size scores of villages have suffered as much, but no city of its mercantile, historic, and artistic importance has suffered in the same manner as Ypres. The engraving shows the beautiful and richly ornamented Cloth Hall, begun by Count Baldwin IX of Flanders in 1200 and completed in 1304. It has been blown to pieces in company with the Cathedral and other notable buildings.



**THE CLOTH HALL IN COURSE OF DESTRUCTION.**

The Cloth Hall at Ypres burning as a result of the German shell fire. It was specially marked for destruction and made a target for the heaviest guns, and at the same time the whole town was subjected to a rain of projectiles.

## II.—OTHER CRIMES AGAINST WOMEN AND CHILDREN TESTIFIED BY THE GERMANS.

STATEMENTS FROM GERMAN SOLDIERS' LETTERS AND DIARIES.

THE statements which follow are made by Germans themselves. The larger number of the statements have been taken from the notebooks and diaries found on German dead and wounded. Other statements have been volunteered by German prisoners, and when this is the case the fact appears from the text. The first of the statements is of this kind, and is taken from the French Official Reports.

### MAJOR KASTENDICK'S ORDER

*Private in the 57th Regiment of Infantry, now a prisoner at Fort Penthièvre, Quiberon.*

We broke into a house at Metten.\* Shots had been fired from a house. We broke into a house, and we were ordered to search the house, but we found nothing in the house but two women and a child. But my comrades said that the two women had fired, and we found some arms, too—revolvers. But I did not see the women fire. But the women were told nothing would be done to them, because they were crying so bitterly. We brought the women out and took them to the major, and then we were ordered to shoot the women.

The Major was called Kastendick and belonged to the 57th Regiment of Infantry. When the mother was dead the major gave the order to shoot the child, so that the child should not be left alone in the world, and when the mother was shot the child was still holding her hand, and as she fell she pulled the child over with her. The child's eyes were bandaged. I have written the truth. I took part in this because we were ordered to do it by Major Kastendick and Captain Dültingen.

(Signed) X.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Fritz Krain, of the 4th Battalion of Light Horse (Reserve), 4th Reserve Corps, concerning the murder of a young girl:*

Carried off four bottles of wine in my bag. Our first bivouac in France. There will soon be a battle, I hope. When we went to fetch water we encountered a girl with a revolver. Shot her dead and took her revolver.

“DEUTSCHLAND ÜBER ALLES.”

*Extract from the notebook of Private Menge, of the 74th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, recording the hanging of a Belgian priest and his sister:*

Saturday, August 15. Marched from Elsenborn. Giving three cheers for our Emperor and singing “Deutschland über Alles,” we crossed the Belgian frontier. All trees cut down to serve as barricades. A parish priest and his sister hanged. Houses burnt.

*Extract from the notebook of Max Peich, 17th Regiment of Infantry, 14th Army Corps, recording the murder of three men and a boy at Fumay (Ardennes):*

August 24. The brickworks were searched once more and three men and a youngster were brought out of one of the kilns. They were shot forthwith.

\* Near Verviers, Belgium.

*Extract from the notebook of Lance-Corporal Paul Spielmann, of the Ersatz, 1st Brigade of Infantry of the Guard, recording the massacre of the inhabitants of a village near Blamont:*

The inhabitants have fled in the village. It was horrible. There was clotted blood on all the beards, and what faces one saw, terrible to behold! The dead, sixty in all, were at once buried. Among them were many old women, some old men, and a half-delivered woman, awful to see; three children had clasped each other, and died thus. The altar and the vaults of the church are shattered. They had a telephone there to communicate with the enemy. This morning, September 2, all the survivors were expelled, and I saw four little boys carrying a cradle, with a baby five or six months old in it, on two sticks. All this was terrible to see. Shot after shot! Thunderbolt after thunderbolt! Everything is given over to pillage; fowls and the rest all killed. I saw a mother, too, with her two children; one had a great wound on the head and had lost an eye.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Max Thomas, of the 107th Regiment of Infantry (8th Saxons), 19th Army Corps, describing the crimes committed by the German troops at Spontin (Belgium):*

August 23, Spontin. A company of the 107th and 108th had orders to stay behind and search the village, take the inhabitant prisoners, and burn the houses. At the entrance to the village, on the right, lay two young girls, one dead, the other severely wounded. The priest, too, was shot in front of the station. Thirty other men were shot according to martial law, and fifty were made prisoners.

### WOMEN HANGED ON TREES.

The following three statements appear in diaries and notebooks placed at the disposal of Mr. Joseph Bedier by the French military authorities:—

#### I.

Langeviller, 22nd August. Village destroyed by the 11th Battalion of the Pioneers. Three women hanged on trees; the first dead I have seen.

#### II.

In this way we destroyed eight houses with their inmates. In one of them two men with their wives and a girl of 18 were bayoneted. The little one almost unnerved me, so innocent was her expression. But it was impossible to check the crowd, so excited were they, for in such moments you are no longer men, but wild beasts.

#### III.

25th August (in Belgium). Three hundred of the inhabitants were shot, and the survivors were requisitioned as grave diggers. You should have seen the women at this moment! But you can't do otherwise. During our march on Wilot things went better; the inhabitants who wished to leave could do so and go where they liked.



But anyone who fired was shot. When we left Owele shots were fired; but there women and everything were fired on. . . .

THE DIARY OF EITEL ANDERS.

(Bryce Report, p. 161, Folio Edition.)

[It appears that there is no name in this diary. We give the name as supplied by the War Office, who evidently obtained the name from a field postcard.] We crossed the Belgian frontier on the 15th August, 1914, at 11.50 in the forenoon, and then we went steadily along the main road until we got into Belgium. Hardly were we there when we had a horrible sight. Houses were burnt down—the inhabitants chased away and some of them shot. Not one of the hundreds of houses was spared. Everything was plundered and burnt. Hardly had we passed through this large village before the next village was burnt, and so it went on continuously. Even the mayor and priests were shot down immediately because they shot at our comrades who were sentries at night when we were asleep. The blackguards have simply crept into the church and crawled right up to the steeple and have fired down from there, so we have immediately set the whole church on fire. The whole rabble which was in it was shot, and hardly was this finished when there was shooting from the next house, where the dogs had simply put up a white flag with a red cross. This also was immediately smashed up and burnt down, and so it went on continuously. On the 16th August, 1914, the large village of Barchon was burnt down. On the same day we crossed the bridge over the Maas [*Meuse*] at 11.50 in the morning. We then arrived at the town of Wandre. Here the houses were spared, but everything was examined. At last we went out of the town, and everything went to ruins. In one house a whole collection of weapons was found. The inhabitants without exception (*Samt-und-sonders*) were brought out and shot. This shooting was heartbreaking, as they all knelt down and prayed, but that was no ground for mercy. A few shots rang out and they fell back into the green grass and slept for ever. In spite of this, the robber rabble did not cease shooting us down from behind—never from in front, but now it got too much for patience, and furious and roaring we proceeded further and further, and everything that got in our road was smashed, and burnt, and shot. At last we have had to go into bivouac; half-tired and worn out we settled down. Then we quickly satisfied our thirst a little, but we only drank wine. The water has been half-poisoned and half left alone by the beasts. Well, to eat and to drink, we have much too much here. Wherever we espy a pig or a fowl or a duck or even pigeons, everything was shot down and killed, so that at least we had something to eat. It is real sport. Now we are lying 15 kilometres from the enemy. I believe either to-day or to-morrow we shall have a big and decisive battle. And yet it won't come off, because the Belgians run like mad when they see our machine guns. The blackguards [*i.e., the Belgian soldiers*] simply lie down, throw the weapons away, and with uplifted hands approach us, and are taken prisoners or partly shot and pushed back. In happy mood and high spirits we passed through the aforesaid village (*Tatur-a-ges*) the next morning, that is to say, on the 24th of August, before we had cleared up the suburb of the town of Mons and burnt the houses. Inhabitants came out of the houses in crowds into the open plain. Here many heart-breaking scenes occurred; it was really terrible to watch.

STEPHAN LUTHER.

(Bryce Report, p. 170.)

On Monday, 10th. Marching *via* Laden and several friendly disposed villages, one of them bombarded in error, and after several further mistakes, temporary quarters on the hill behind the village, which was again completely on fire. In the village below, the saddest

scenes; naturally many misunderstandings occurred because officers understood no French. There was terrible destruction; in one farmhouse was a woman who had been completely stripped and who lay on burnt beams. There was, of course, reason for such procedure, but how savage.

## OUTRAGES AND MURDER OF WOMEN IN BELGIUM.

■ The following additional cases in which outrage or bestial cruelty were added to murder are taken from the Bryce Report. As before, the character of the witnesses is indicated, and the number and lettering refers to the case in the report:—

### BELGIAN SOLDIER (H 67), HAECHT.

At Haecht, in September, I saw the dead body of a young girl nailed to the outside door of a cottage by her hands. I am sure there were no nails in the feet. She was about 14 or 16 years old. I was out on a reconnaissance with three others of the same regiment, one of them a sous-officer. The village had been occupied by the Germans for a fortnight, and they had just been driven out. I cannot say the exact date. I was alone when I saw it—100 yards in advance—but I reported it later to the officer.

### BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 89).

Whilst advancing from Epeghem with the same three men on the same day along the Brussels route towards Vilvorde, and shortly after passing the station of Weerde, we met a woman whose blouse or dress was torn open in front and she was all covered with blood. Her breasts had been cut off, the edges of the wounds being torn and rough. We spoke to the woman. She was with us for 10 minutes, but it was impossible to understand what she was saying as she was "folle."\*

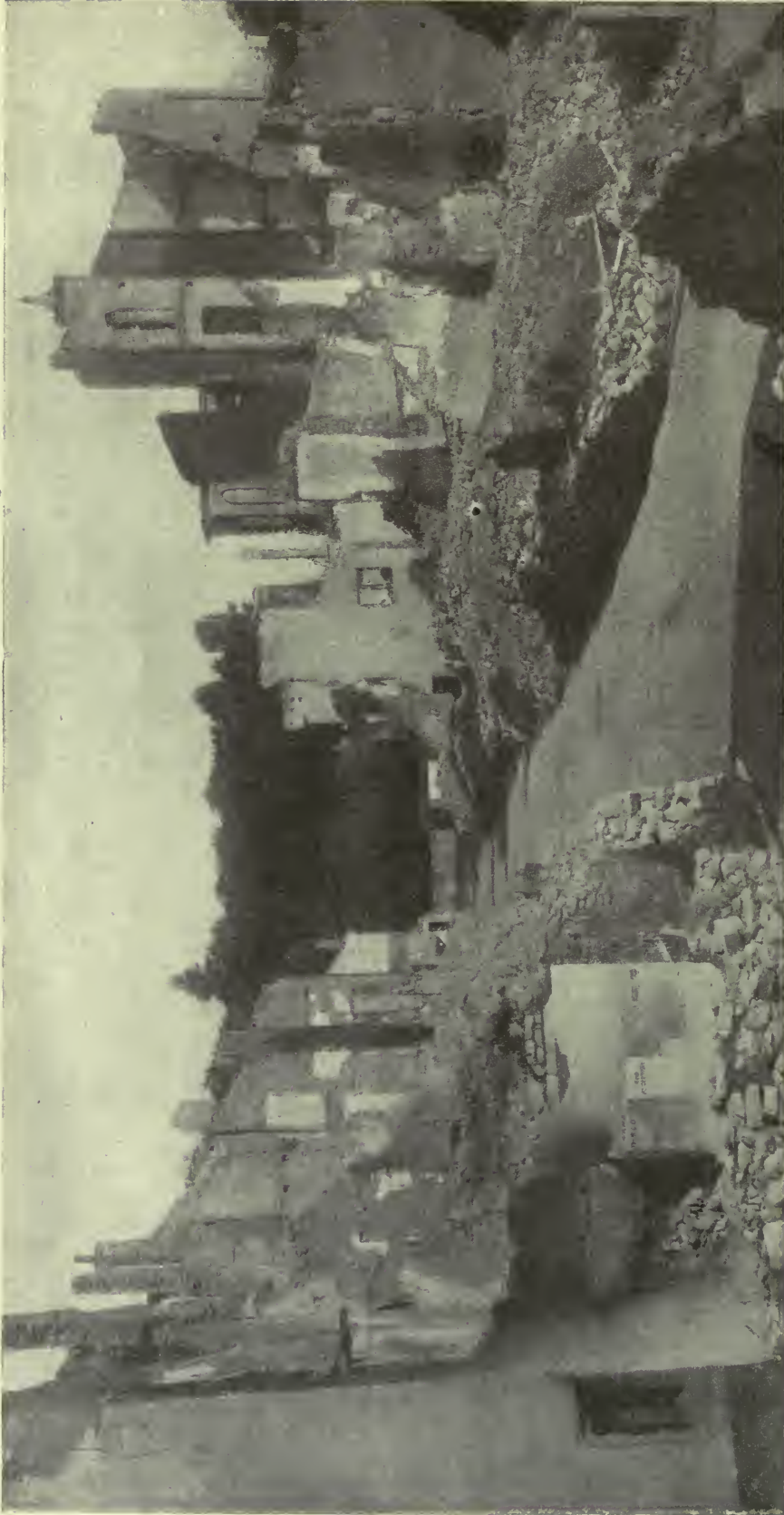
### SERGEANT IN THE BELGIAN ARMY (D 26).

I was serving with my regiment at Hofstade on the 25th August. We were driving the Germans out of Hofstade. I went into a house on the left-hand side of the main road from Malines to Brussels. I there saw the body of a woman lying on the floor. Both breasts were cut off. There was also the body of a child lying close to the other body. Some of the limbs had been cut off. It was either both arms and both legs or both hands and both feet. I do not remember which. On the following day at Elewytt, a village a little further on, in a private house I saw a man and woman lying on the floor who had been bayoneted all over their bodies. The woman was dead and the man was still living.

### BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 1), MALINES.

Two women, one of whom I took to be the mother of the other, were close to a house, and were together. The German soldier, whom I have mentioned, struck the elder woman in the middle of the back with his bayonet, and I saw the blade coming through her breast as she faced me. She immediately fell down. I was then about 100 metres from her. The younger woman was a simple peasant, and wore nothing but a skirt, a blouse, and under it a chemise. The soldier immediately pulled off the blouse of the younger woman, and her breasts were quite naked. I saw him then cut off both the woman's breasts, and I saw two large red wounds on the woman's chest. I believe this was done with his bayonet, but it may have been done with a knife, as the German soldiers also carry knives. The woman fell dead. When this happened I

\* Note by Examining Barrister.—Witness told me that by "folle" he thought she was delirious with pain.



THE RUINS OF GERBÉVILLER.

Gerbéville and its inhabitants suffered on account of the resistance offered to the Germans by some sixty French *chasseurs à pied*. Nearly all the buildings were burnt; out of 475 houses twenty at most were habitable. Bavarians under General Clauss are held responsible.

was then about 50 mètres away from the soldier. I immediately shot the soldier, and he fell. Several other soldiers also witnessed this.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (A 33), PEPINSTER.

After the baby had been killed we saw the officer say something to the farmer's wife and saw her push him away. After five or six minutes the two soldiers seized the woman and put her on the ground. She resisted them, and they then pulled all her clothes off her until she was quite naked. The officer then violated her while one soldier held her by the shoulders and the other by the arms. After the officer each soldier in turn violated her, the other soldier and the officer holding her down. The farmer did not see his wife violated; the two men-servants had pulled him down from the bench after the baby had been killed, and they would not let him get up again. After the woman had been violated by the three the officer cut off the woman's breasts. I then saw him take out his revolver and point it at the woman on the ground. At this moment the farmer broke away from the two men-servants, jumped on to a chair, and

put his foot through the window. The two men-servants and I and the servant girl ran away as soon as the farmer had broken the window and we know nothing more. We ran into the fields, and from there saw the farmhouse had been set on fire.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 136), MALINES.

I was at Malines on the 26th of August. Early in the morning I was making a reconnaissance, searching the houses to see if there were any Germans there. I had four private soldiers with me. On the road from Haecht to Malines we entered a house outside Malines, *i.e.*, after having passed the town of Malines. We found a peasant woman of 60 to 70 years of age, dead. She was cold, and a boy of 15 or 16. The woman had her breast cut off. There was a very large quantity of blood on the floor and she had evidently bled to death. She was nude from head to waist. There were no other wounds that I could see. I did not move the body; I only touched it to see if it was warm or cold. From the nature of the wound I should say it was done by a bayonet and not by a sabre.

### III.—OUTRAGES AGAINST CIVILIANS IN FRANCE AND BELGIUM.

#### FRENCH OFFICIAL REPORTS.

**T**HE TWO CASES WHICH FOLLOW are from the French Official Report. The first of them describe the burning of French civilians at Hartennes (Aisne).

*Report by Col. Huguet, head of the French Military Mission attached to the British Expeditionary Force, to the General Commander-in-Chief of the French Army at Châtillon-sur-Seine:—*

FERE-EN-TARDENOIS, September 23, 1914.

"On the 2nd September, 1914, a patrol of Uhlans passed through the village of Hartennes. The inhabitants had all taken refuge in the cellars of their houses. There were only three men in the village, the rest of the population consisting entirely of women and children.

"A French patrol of Dragoons, coming up on the other side of the village, opened fire on the Uhlans, who retreated. The Uhlans made this attack their pretext for declaring that the villagers had fired at them, and they proceeded to search for such inhabitants as still remained in the village. At first they only found women and children, but eventually they discovered the legs of three men, who had hidden in a large pipe connected with the oven of a bakery. Without further inquiry, the Uhlans closed up the end of the pipe after having filled the oven with burning straw. The three Frenchmen were soon dead, asphyxiated by the smoke, and the Uhlans then pulled out their bodies. These three men were buried near the village: their names were Eugène Brehaut, Léon Courty, and Joseph Poulain. Their relatives living in the village can be called as witnesses."

(Signed) J. H. DAVIDSON, Major on the Staff  
of the 3rd Corps.

(Signed) A. HUGUET.

#### THE MASSACRE AT NOMÉNY.

*Deposition of M. Charles-Ferdinand Barbe. Police report dated August 24th, 1914:—*

"From the 15th to the 20th August, Nomény was the centre of military operations. Several German shells fell in the village, although there were no French troops there. More than once we were compelled to seek refuge in the cellars, because several of the inhabitants had been killed or wounded by the bursting shells. As soon as the bombardment ceased, we came out of the cellars and went on with our work. After the 20th August, the surviving inhabitants continued to live in their cellars without food. If any of them went out to seek provisions, the German soldiers killed them, shooting them in the street. Whether by night or by day, those who ventured out were fired upon.

"Even before the 20th of August, the German soldiers had already begun to put peaceful civilians to death in Nomény and the surrounding country.

"But after the 20th of August, arson and looting became matters of everyday occurrence, no doubt because the French patrols had retired.

"It should be observed that the Germans killed the inhabitants of Nomény and burned their houses without ever having formulated a complaint of any sort against them, and without ever having uttered a threat or a warning, or being provoked in any way. They proceeded as if they were acting under orders, and as a matter of regular duty, in cold blood. From the 5th to the 20th August the Commune of Nomény had supplied them with all the provisions they had asked for, and frequently without payment of any sort.

"A number of the inhabitants were killed in the streets; some inside their houses, some in the fields, and some in their beds. For the most part the victims were old men, women and children. Speaking from personal



MASSACRE AT GERBÉVILLER.

Bodies of civilians shot at a place called "la Prele," Gerbéviller. Many people were massacred. Some were led into the fields and shot, as shown above, others were murdered in their homes or as they strove to escape from the burning buildings. Besides the murders innumerable acts of violence were committed.

[Photographs reproduced from the Report of the French Official Commission.]

recollection, I am able to give the names of several people murdered in this way :

“ Meunier, retired butcher, 50 years of age ; Raymond, senior, 55 years of age, day-labourer ; Schneider, draper, 40 years of age ; Charvin, 50 years of age, acting Mayor ; Humbert, 60 years of age, notary (his wife and daughter are grievously wounded) ; Killian, 70 years of age, day-labourer ; Forgelet, 72 years of age, shepherd of the Commune.

“ After killing Forgelet, his murderers decapitated him on the spot. The shepherd who took Forgelet's place was killed on the following day, and the village flock (500 to 600 sheep) was carried off by the Germans.

“ Cahen, 45 years of age, cattle dealer ; Madame Cousin, 56 years of age, of independent means ; Vincent, 57 years of age, drayman ; Kieffert, 36 years of age, licensed victualler (his wife\* and son, 16 years of age, were killed with him) ; Ménétréz, 55 years of age, day-labourer ; Guillaume, 58 years of age, lawyer's clerk ; Vassé, 18 years of age, day-labourer. (Madame Cousin, after being killed, was thrown by the German soldiers into the midst of a burning house, where her body was burned to ashes.)

“ I may also mention the case of Jean-Pierre Adam who was thrown alive into the fire by the German soldiers ; as he did not burn quickly enough to please them, they finished him off with rifle shots.

“ Another man named Conrart, 72 years of age, bed-ridden for seven or eight years, was killed in his bed by the German soldiers. I have omitted certain other cases, such as that of M. and Madame Gourcier, farmers of Laborde, who were killed in their home, and many others, whose names escape me.

“ Near the station I saw in front of the Café Français, which was kept by M. Paul Marcus, some German soldiers who fired at all the passers-by ; they killed a child, to me unknown, which could not have been more than two years of age. I saw this child, clad in a red-and-white striped dress ; it fell stone dead. I also saw a woman 60 years of age killed in her garden, an invalid who had come out to get a little fresh air.

“ I estimate that out of thirteen hundred inhabitants at Nomény, at least 150 were killed by the Germans. Only two houses were left standing.”

## EYE-WITNESSES' STORIES.

In Lord Bryce's Report of outrages on civilians the evidence is again in the actual words of the eye-witnesses. The references are as before.

### BELGIAN SOLDIER (A 31), LIÈGE.

The Belgians from the houses were marched off to the Place de l'Université between files of soldiers. I followed, keeping about 25 or 30 mètres behind. When the Place was reached the Belgians were not formed up in any order, but the Germans fired on them. I heard an officer shout an order in German, and all the Germans in one part of the square fired. The firing was not in volleys and went on for about 20 minutes. Whilst this was going on other Germans were going into other houses in the square and bringing out more Belgians, whom they put among those who were being shot. Altogether 32 were killed—all men. I counted the bodies afterwards. I saw all this from the end of the Rue Soens de Hasse. There were many Belgians with me, but none of us were troubled. When I saw any Germans coming I got out of the way. I was not in uniform and had my revolver in my pocket.

### BELGIAN REFUGEE (B 2), ANDENNE.

Several mitrailleuses were put into action in various streets of the town. Some of these mitrailleuses were

\* This is an error. Mme. Kieffert, though wounded, has survived.

placed on one side of the street so as to fire on the house on the opposite side. The Germans were for the most part drunk, and they were stationed before the houses, firing with their rifles into the doors and windows. About six o'clock in the morning a group of Germans burst into the house where we had taken refuge. It was in the principal square of Andenne. We were taken with our hands raised above our heads into the square, and there each of us was searched—men, women, and children ; old people, sick people, and invalids were dragged there from every part of the town. The men were lined up on one side and the women on another. Three men were shot before our eyes, a fourth was run through by a bayonet and drew his last breath in our midst. He was a butcher (names given). The first idea of the German colonel (I do not know what regiment he belonged to, but this fact has been noted by others) was to shoot us all, so far as we can tell. However, a young German girl from Berlin intervened and begged the colonel to spare us. She had been staying a few days at Andenne. The colonel dropped his first idea and decided to put 25 soldiers round us and make them shoot once apiece into the mass of us. The girl intervened again, and the colonel thereupon chose out some of us, and they were taken on to the banks of the Meuse and shot.

### MARRIED WOMAN (B 4), HUY.

On the 23rd, a Sunday morning, my father, being in ill-health, went out for a walk. He met 15 Germans, who beat him ; his skull was cut open, but he was not dead. He was carrying an umbrella, and the German soldiers accused him of carrying a gun. They dragged him as far as the theatre in the park, where they again beat him and broke his feet with their rifle butts. Finally they hanged him to the roof of the theatre.

### ENGINEER (B 17), MONCEAU-SUR-SAMBRE.

About the 21st August at Monceau-sur-Sambre the Germans shot a young man belonging to the district named R. He was 18. They shot him in his garden. This is how it happened : the Germans burst in the front door, the young man ran out into the garden by the back door ; the Germans shot him, firing from the corner of the house into the garden. Immediately afterwards the Germans seized the young man's father and another of his sons aged 22. They took them to the courtyard of a chateau (the Château Baslieu), and shot them there together with some others. They shot the son first, then they compelled the father to stand close to his son's feet and to fix his eyes upon him, and shot him in that position.

### BELGIAN REFUGEE (B23), COUILLET.

When I returned I found our doctor in the house. The doctor at first tried to prevent me from entering the dining-room. I, however, insisted upon doing so, and found there the dead bodies of my father and my mother and a little nephew of mine. My father's body had eight bullet wounds in it, of which three were in the head and five in the body. My mother's body had five bullet wounds in it, one in the temple, one at the back of the skull, and three in the back. My said nephew had been killed by a bayonet or sword ; there were four wounds in the head and one in the stomach.

### BELGIAN REFUGEE (C 46), CAMPENHOUT.

They knocked the tops off the bottles and drank the wine. They then asked for my master and mistress. By this time they were all very drunk and were not able to drink any more, but were breaking the bottles which they made me continue to bring from the passage. My master and mistress came along the passage, and my master pushed my mistress in front of him into the room as she was unwilling to enter. He thought it was advisable to go in as the Germans had ordered them to come. Immediately my mistress came in one of the officers who



BURNT INTERIOR OF RHEIMS CATHEDRAL.

A photograph giving an idea of the effect of the fire on the inner walls. The whole of the interior non-structural decoration is ruined. The fire from the scaffolding burned through the door, destroyed the fine wooden tambours or vestibules surrounding these doors, and calcinated the extraordinary stone sculptures decorating the entire interior of the western wall.

was sitting on the floor got up, and, putting the revolver to my mistress's temple, he shot her dead. The officer was obviously drunk. I think he was an officer, because he was always giving orders. He wore a yellow cord across his breast and another one hanging over his arm. I did not see the number of the regiment, but they had yellow epaulettes. I could easily recognise the man if I saw him again. I should think he was about 40 years old. The other officers continued to drink and sing, and did not pay great attention to the killing of my mistress. The officer who had shot my mistress then told my master to dig a grave and bury my mistress. I then asked the officer if I might dig the grave. The officer replied that my master must do it himself, and that he would see that it was done. My master and the officer then went into the garden, the officer threatening my master with his pistol. My master was then forced to dig the grave and to bury the body of my mistress in it.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 33), WILLEBROECK.

On or about the 26th of August I was on patrol duty after the Germans had been repulsed in this neighbourhood between Hofstade and Willebroeck—on a side road. There were several houses near me. On the doorstep of one, which belonged to a farrier, just before the entrance I saw the farrier lying dead. I knew it to be the farrier because he was still wearing his apron. He had a bayonet wound in the stomach. By his side lay a young boy—I should say of five or six years of age—his two hands nearly severed from the arms, but still hanging to them. He was dead also.

BELGIAN REFUGEE—GIRL (C 24), AERSCHOT.

When I was locked up in the church at Aerschot on the occasion when I went out to the w.c. I saw two soldiers bringing the under-priest of Gelrode along. They were coming from the direction of Gelrode and in the direction of the church. When they got to the churchyard the priest was struck several times by each soldier on the head. He was still walking along. They then pushed him against the wall of the church. This was immediately after he was struck on the head. I heard the priest ask the soldiers if he could stand with his face to the wall. He spoke in Flemish. They didn't answer, and he tried to turn round. The Germans stopped him, and then turned him with his face to the wall with his hands above his head. The other two women with me saw and heard all this. Their names are unknown to me. I saw the priest standing like this for a minute or so whilst I was out of the church. About an hour later I went out again alone and saw the priest still standing there, and then the Germans came and led him away. Seven of them led him away to another house about 50 yards away. They placed him with his face towards the wall of this house, and five soldiers shot him. They killed him—I saw he didn't move.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (D 97), BUEKEN

At Bucken (Brabant) I saw a priest ill-treated; he was an old man of 75 or 80 years of age. He was brought up with the other prisoners; he could not walk fast enough; he was driven on with blows from butt ends of rifles and knocked down. He cried out, "I can go no farther," and a soldier thrust his bayonet into his neck at the back—the blood flowed down in quantities. The old man begged to be shot, but the officer said, "That's too good for you!" He was taken off behind a house and we heard shots. He did not return.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (E 3).

Twenty thousand of the prisoners were then taken by the Chaussée d'Aerschot on the way to Aerschot, and from there we were taken back to Louvain on foot. On the way we rested a moment. The old clergyman of Rotselaer,

a man 86 years of age, spoke to the officer of the regiment. "Mr. Officer, what you are doing now is a cowardly act. My people did no harm, and if you want a victim kill me. I have received my soul from God, and I give up my soul to God's keeping." The German soldiers then took hold of the clergyman by the neck and took him away. Some Germans picked mud from the ground and threw it in his face. I never saw him again.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 137), AERSCHOT.

On or about the 6th September we left Antwerp for Aerschot, and on the road near Aerschot I saw a round well. I saw that the bodies of four people were in the well, namely, those of a man, a woman, and two children; and on the well there had been chalked some German words, which I was informed meant that the people in the well were being washed, and had to be left there.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (K 3), HAELEN.

At Haelen, about August the 20th, I was with my regiment in the trenches. The next day after the battle we were on patrol duty, and when in a wood I saw the body of a carabinier hanging on a tree; the chest and stomach were cut open and the heart had been taken out. This was a spot about 300 metres behind the German lines.

ENGINEER (D 131).

In numerous instances we saw dead bodies of Belgian civilians in the wells—men, women, and children. I remember particularly seeing dead bodies in the villages of Schrieck, Linden, Tremeloo, and in the environs of Betecom. All the villages in which we saw dead bodies in the wells showed many signs of the enemy's presence and very many houses were burnt.

BRITISH SOLDIER (L 13), HARMIGNIES.

On 24th August I was on outpost duty at a village close to Harmignies. I was then a lance-corporal. We saw four Germans beating a woman tied to a tree, stripped to the waist. The Germans were infantrymen, I think, belonging to the 75th Regiment; they were fully equipped and wearing helmets. The woman had four marks across her back bleeding. We were 100 yards away when we first saw them and close to a wood from which we came; we fired shots, killed three and one escaped. I cut the woman down; she fainted. We took her to a house in the village mentioned above and put her in the charge of some French soldiers. This was early in the morning, about 7 o'clock.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (A 19), FLEMALLE GRANDE.

After placing them against the wall, the soldiers went a little distance from them, then shot the four men. They did not shoot the woman, though they had placed her in the middle with two of the men on each side of her. She cried and fell on her knees and begged for mercy, and they did not shoot her. The shots did not kill the men, and they lay groaning on the ground, and the soldiers then went up to them, killed them outright with their bayonets.

Two of the soldiers tried to kiss the woman; but she resisted, and escaped from them and ran into her house.

MARRIED WOMAN (D 29), HOFSTADE.

I ran over the bridge and took shelter in a house, which was occupied by two families, and there were 13 children in the house. One of the two men was confined to his bed with rheumatism, and the German soldiers bound this man to his bed with his hands behind his back. They then took the second man and shot him in my presence and in the presence of all the children. I then fled.



ONE OF MANY SMALL VICTIMS.

Belgian child, aged eight years, with wound from German revolver bullet in forearm.



CIVILIAN PRISONERS.

Distinctive decoration of civilian prisoners in German war camps. Thousands of civilians in Belgium have suffered depopulation. Men, women, and children were crammed together into goods waggons and forced to travel without food and under the most distressing conditions. The German soldiery, alleging they were *franc-tireurs* and murderers, treated them with the greatest brutality. An official report says it can hardly be wondered at that many have become insane.



## BELGIAN REFUGEE (B 29), DINANT.

We were marched between two lines of troops to Roche Bayard, about a kilometre away. There we were placed in front of the German line: meantime the Germans were building a bridge over the Meuse immediately behind us. It was then dark. An hour later the women

and children were separated and we were brought back to Dinant, passing the prison on our way. Just outside the prison I saw three lines of bodies which I recognised as being those of neighbours. They were nearly all dead, but I noticed movement in some of them; there were about 120 bodies.

## IV.—OTHER MURDERS AND CRUELITIES ATTESTED BY GERMAN EVIDENCE

**C**ONFIRMATION of the murders, the outrages, the burnings, the pillage committed by the German soldiery is found in the papers and diaries on them. The keeping of diaries is recommended by German military authority, and they are especially valuable as records of actual events.

All the diaries and papers which appear in the Report of the Bryce Commission were submitted by the Prisoners of War Information Bureau. In some cases they were taken from German corpses; in others from German prisoners of war. Their authenticity is absolute.

When the extracts which follow are taken from the Bryce Report, the fact is noted. Other papers and diaries are from French sources.

### A BATH OF BLOOD.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Hassemmer, of the 8th Army Corps, describing a massacre of French soldiers and civilians at Sommepey (Marne).*

September 3. A horrible bath of blood. The whole village burnt, the French thrown into the blazing houses, civilians burnt with the rest.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Karl Scheufele, of the 3rd Bavarian Regiment of Landwehr Infantry, describing the burning of Saint-Maurice (Meurthe-et-Moselle) and its inhabitants.*

In the night of August 18-19 the village of Saint-Maurice was punished for having fired on German soldiers by being burnt to the ground by the German troops (two regiments, the 12th Landwehr and the 17th). The village was surrounded, men posted about a yard from one another, so that no one could get out. Then the Uhlans set fire to it, house by house. Neither man, woman, nor child could escape; only the greater part of the live stock we carried off, as that could be used. Anyone who ventured to come out was shot down. All the inhabitants left in the village were burnt with the houses.

*Extract from the diary of Fr. Treinen, a volunteer enlisted in the 237th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing the murder of a young man near Roulers (Belgium).*

October 19, 1914. The owners of this property, rich and distinguished-looking people, fill the air with their lamentations and call upon the mercy of God. We make a search, and find a revolver on the person of a young man of 21. Screaming with terror, he is dragged out to the front of the farmhouse, and there shot before the eyes of his parents and brothers and sisters.

The sight was more than I could stand. After that a light was put to the splendid barn and everything was destroyed.

### AT NOMÉNY.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Fischer, 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry, 33rd Reserve Division.*

A shell burst near the 11th Company, and wounded seven men, three very severely. At 5 o'clock we were ordered by the officer in command of the regiment to shoot all the male inhabitants of Nomény, because the population was foolishly attempting to stay the advance of the German troops by force of arms. We broke into the houses, and seized all who resisted, in order to execute them according to martial law. The houses which had not been already destroyed by the French artillery and our own were set on fire by us, so that nearly the whole town was reduced to ashes. It is a terrible sight when helpless women and children, utterly destitute, are herded together and driven into France.

*Diary of Lieut. Kielzmann, 2nd Company, 1st Battalion, 49th Infantry Regiment.*

18th August. A little in front of Diest lies the village of Schaffen. About fifty civilians had hidden in the church tower, and had fired on our men with a machine gun. All were shot.

### WHAT GERMANS SAW AT DINANT.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Philipp, of the 178th Regiment of Infantry, 12th Army Corps, describing the massacre of the civil population in a village near Dinant.*

At 10 o'clock in the evening the first battalion of the 178th marched down the steep incline into the burning village to the north of Dinant. A terrific spectacle of ghastly beauty. At the entrance to the village lay about fifty dead civilians, shot for having fired upon our troops from ambush. In the course of the night many others were also shot, so that we counted over 200. Women and children, lamp in hand, were forced to look on at the horrible scene. We ate our rice later in the midst of the corpses, for we had had nothing since morning. When we searched the houses we found plenty of wine and spirit, but no eatables. Captain Hamann was drunk. (This last phrase in shorthand.)

*Extract from the notebook of Erich Dressler, of the 3rd Company of the 100th Regiment of Grenadiers (1st Saxon Corps).*

August 25. The Belgians at Dinant on the Meuse fired on our regiment from the houses. All those who showed themselves or who were thrown out of the houses were shot, whether men or women. Corpses were lying in the street, piled up a yard high. In the evening guarded prisoners for the night.

*Extract from the notebook of an anonymous soldier of the 11th Battalion of Light Infantry, 11th Army Corps, concerning massacres at Leffe and Dinant.*

At Leffe, nineteen civilians shot. Women begging for mercy as we marched towards the Meuse.

Ten more men have been shot. The King having directed the people to defend the country by all possible means, we have received orders to shoot the entire male population.

At 2 p.m. furious rifle and cannon fire and awful heavy artillery fire on the Meuse.

At Dinant about 100 men or more were huddled together and shot. A horrible Sunday.

*Diary of a Saxon officer (unsigned), 178th Regiment, 12th Army Corps, 1st Saxon Corps.*

"26th August. The pretty village of Gue-d'Hossus in the Ardennes has been burnt, although innocent of any crime, it seemed to me. I was told a cyclist had fallen off his machine, and that in doing so his gun had gone off, so they fired in his direction. Thereupon the male inhabitants were simply consigned to the flames. It is to be hoped that such atrocities will not be repeated."

The Saxon officer, however, had already seen such "atrocities" the previous day, 25th August, at Villers en Fagne (Belgian Ardennes). "Where some Grenadiers of the Guard had been found dead or wounded"; he had seen the priest and other villagers shot; and three days earlier, the 23rd August, in the village of Bouvignes to the north of Dinant, he had seen things which he describes as follows:—

"We got into the property of a well-to-do inhabitant by a breach effected in the rear, and we occupied the house. Through a maze of rooms we reached the threshold. There was the body of the owner on the floor. Inside our men destroyed everything, like vandals. Every corner was searched. Outside, in the country, the sight of the villagers who had been shot defies all description. The volley had almost decapitated some of them.

"Every house had been searched to the smallest corner, and the inhabitants dragged from their hiding places. The men were shot; the women and children shut up in a convent, from which some shots were fired. Consequently the convent is to be burnt. It can be ransomed on surrender of the guilty and payment of 150,000 francs."

*Unsigned Diary of a German Soldier.*

19.8.14. Tongres . . . a large number of houses looted by our cavalry.

26.8. A lot more villages burnt. In front of one of them there were the bodies of about twenty civilians who had been shot.

1.9. Through Creil. The iron bridge had been blown up; for this, whole streets were burned and civilians shot

No. 19. (NO NAME.)

(*Bryce Report*, p. 175.)

(*The writer of the diary was in the 1st Battalion of the 1st Regiment of the Guards. The German Army List for June, 1914, gives the names of five or six officers referred to in a note under August 24th as belonging to the Guards, viz., Lt. von Oppen, Graf. Eulenberg, Capt. von Roeder, 1st Lt. Engelbrecht, 1st Lt. von Bock und Pollack, Lt. Graf. Hardenberg.*

No name. No address. A blue book interleaved with blotting paper.)

24th Aug., 1914.—In front of village of Ermeton we took about a thousand prisoners. At least 500 were shot. The village was burnt because the inhabitants also had shot. Two civilians were shot at once. While searching a house for beds we had an exceptionally good feed—bread, wine, butter, jelly, preserved fruits, and many other things were our booty. . . . We washed ourselves from the blood, cleaned the bayonets. . . . In the

evening we got into our quarters—the best up to now—plenty of clean linen—preserved things, wine, salted meat, and cigars.

**"WIPE OUT."**

FRANZ MOKER.

(*Bryce Report*, p. 178.)

(*As a guide to locality the writer says he passes through Waterloo on the 21st August.*)

19th Aug., 1914, Wednesday.—About midday we arrived in a village which had been terribly ravaged. Houses burnt; everything broken to pieces; bellowing animals which were wandering about the streets, and inhabitants who had been shot. A company of the Infantry Regiment No. 75, who had encamped not far from the village the previous night, was attacked by the inhabitants and carried through a massacre. Sixty-nine brave soldiers were killed or wounded. As a punishment the village in question was completely wiped out.

20th Aug.—We passed again through villages where the inhabitants had been shooting, and the usual punishment had been inflicted.

MATBERN.

(*Bryce Report*, p. 171.)

(4th Company of the Jäger No. 11, from Marburg.) Aug. 6th crossed frontier.—Inhabitants on border very good to us and give us many things. There is no difference noticeable.

Aug. 12th.—The (French) aviator recently fired upon was again fired on by dragoons of guards and had to come down. He had previously thrown down a letter to the Mayor of Bastogne asking him for help, and that he should meet him at an appointed place. This mayor was shot.

Aug. 23rd, Sunday (between Birnal and Dinant, village of Disonge).—At 11 o'clock the order comes to advance after the artillery has thoroughly prepared the ground ahead. The Pioneers and Infantry Regiment 178 were marching in front of us. Near a small village the latter were fired on by the inhabitants. About 220 inhabitants were shot and the village was burnt—artillery is continuously shooting—the village lies in a large ravine. Just now, 6 o'clock in the afternoon, the crossing of the Maas begins near Dinant. . . . All villages, chateaux and houses are burnt down during this night. It was a beautiful sight to see the fires all round us in the distance.

Aug. 24th.—In every village one finds only heaps of ruins and many dead

JOH. VAN DER SCHOOT.

(*Bryce Report*, p. 173.)

Aug. 20th.—March out as escort for prisoners to Cologne (?), 11 o'clock at Cologne, depart at 12.15. In the night the inhabitants of Liège became mutinous. Forty persons were shot and 15 houses demolished, 10 soldiers shot. The sights here make you cry.

Aug. 21st.—Everything quiet during the day; in the night the soldiers were again fired on, we then demolished again several houses.

On the 23rd August everything quiet. The inhabitants have so far given in. Seventy students were shot, 200 kept prisoners. Inhabitants returning to Liège

Aug. 24th.—At noon with 36 men on sentry duty. Sentry duty is A 1, no post allocated to me. Our occupation, apart from bathing, is eating and drinking. We live like God in Belgium.

WETZEL.

(*Bryce Report*, p. 175.)

Bombardier, 2nd Mounted Battery, 1st Kurhessian Field Artillery, Regiment No. 11.—Aug. 8th.—First fight and set fire to several villages.

Aug. 9th.—Returned to old quarters ; there we searched all the houses and shot the mayor (*this is in France*), and shot one man down from the chimney pot, and then we again set fire to the village.

On the 18th August Letalle (?) captured 10 men with three priests because they have shot down from the church tower. They were brought into the village of Ste. Marie.

Oct 5th.—We were in quarters in the evening at Willekamm. Lieut. Radfels was quartered in the mayor's house and there had two prisoners (tied together) on a short whip, and in case anything happened they were to be killed. (*In neighbourhood of Lille*) on the 11th of October.—We had no fight, but we caught about 20 men and shot them.

HUSSAR W. HILLER.

(*Bryce Report*, p. 168.)

4th Squadron, 2nd Regiment.—6th Aug., 1914.—After we had taken three houses we proceeded. The village Wahreit burnt at all corners because the inhabitants had fired on troops. Here one saw only burning houses and heaps of dead people and horses every three steps.

7th Aug., 1914.—Friday at 8.30 came the news that English had landed in Belgium. We broke up immediately everything, and we went on. On the road we saw many people hanging.

KURT HOFFMANN.

(*Bryce Report*, pp. 168-169.)

Einj. 1st Company Jäger No. 4, Naumburg-on-Saale.—Aug. 4th, Herve.—Hardly had we gone to bed dead-beat

at 9.30, when there were shots, crack, crack! It struck against our wall—everybody out, nothing to be seen. Our field patrol supposed to have shot at the relief patrol(?).

Aug. 5th (in front of Fort Fléron).—The position was dangerous. As suspicious civilians were hanging about, houses 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 were cleared, the owners arrested (and shot the following day). Suddenly village A. was fired at. Out of it bursts our baggage train, and the 4th Company of the 27th Regiment, who had lost their way and been shelled by our own artillery. From the point D. P. I shoot a civilian with rifle, at 400 metres, slap through the head, as we afterwards ascertained.

Field patrol established in house 31, Gantert arrives with a cyclists' patrol. A man approaches who does not give the countersign: a shot, another one; ten minutes later people approach who are talking excitedly—apparently Germans. I call out "Halt! Who's there?" Suddenly rapid fire is opened upon us, which I can only escape by quickly jumping on one side—with bullets and fragments of wall and pieces of glass flying round me. I call out "Halt, here field patrol." Then it stops, and there appears Lieutenant Römer with three platoons. A man had reported that he had been shot at out of our house: no wonder, if he does not give the countersign.

We were supposed to go *via* Micheroux, &c., to Fléron. However, already in Micheroux the enemy appeared—no military, but civilians supposed to have been soldiers in *musti*, because shot after shot came out of the houses at Micheroux. There were flashes from all the attic windows. Result, in half an hour the village was a mass of flames. That was the beginning of the fight of the 6th August, the details of which it is too horrible to describe.

## V.—BURNING, LOOT, AND PILLAGE.

### THROUGH GERMAN EYES.

THESE LETTERS AND DIARIES, like those on previous pages, were found on the bodies of dead German soldiers or on German prisoners. The originals are in the possession of the British or French military authorities.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Albers, of the 78th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 10th Reserve Corps, describing looting.*

Aug. 24, lost touch with my company. Aug. 25, found them again at Berzee, south of Charleroi. News of the fall of Belfort. Great rejoicing among the troops. They sing "Deutschland, Deutschland über Alles."

More wine than water. The German soldiers of the baggage train loot whatever they can. They overhaul cupboards, drawers, &c., and throw everything out on the floor. Terribly wild.

*Extract from the notebook of an anonymous soldier of the 50th Regiment of Infantry, 5th Army Corps, concerning the burning and sacking of Ethe (Belgium).*

In the night Ethe was entirely in flames, and it was a magnificent sight from a distance. The next day, August 23, Ethe was almost entirely in ruins, and we looted everything that was left in the way of provisions. We carried

off quantities of bacon, eggs, bread, jam, tobacco, cigars, cigarettes, and, above all, wine for our regiment.

*Extract from the notebook of Non-commissioned Officer Reinhold Koehn, of the 2nd Battalion of Engineers, 3rd Army Corps, recording the sack of Visé (Belgium).*

During the night of August 15-16 Engineer Gr . . . gave the alarm in the town of Visé. Everyone was shot or taken prisoner, and the houses were burnt. The prisoners were made to march and keep up with the troops.

"NOT A HOUSE INTACT."

*Extract from German soldier's diary. No name.*

When one sees the ravaged villages one can form some idea of the fury of our soldiers. There is not a house intact. Everything eatable is requisitioned by individual soldiers. Dead people were lying in heaps, shot after trial by martial law. Little pigs were running about looking for their mothers, dogs were left chained up with nothing to eat or drink, and the houses were burning above them.

Together with the righteous anger of our troops a spirit of pure vandalism exists. In villages which are already completely deserted they set fire to the houses just as the spirit moves them. My heart grieves for the inhabitants. It may be that they make use of treacherous weapons,



[Photo: *Central News.*]

**CLERMONT-EN-ARGONNE AS IT IS TO-DAY.**

Some of the remains of Clermont-en-Argonne, a little town on the slope of a picturesque hill in the middle of a pleasant landscape. It fell a victim to the fury of Württembergers under General von Durach. It was here the Germans danced to the church organ, while the houses blazed, and afterwards fired the church.

but if so, after all, they are only defending their country. The atrocities which these townspeople have committed, or are still committing, are avenged in a cruel manner.

Mutilation of the wounded is the order of the day.

*Name and address not known.*

Aug. 25. The village of Hargnies is to be burnt on account of the hostile inhabitants.

A great many bottles of wine were found, and some of these were distributed among the men.

Aug. 26. Stayed to bivouac at Namur. Many prisoners brought in to-day. The village has been thoroughly plundered; only a few small hovels in which some old people live were spared. A great deal was wantonly destroyed. The houses are a terrible sight. Everything ransacked and smashed.

*Extract from the notebook of Private Willmer, of the 40th Brigade, Ersatz Battalion 10th Division, Ersatz Corps, recording the plundering at Champenoux, at Brin (Meurthe-et-Moselle), and at Loupmont (Meuse).*

September 5. In the village of Champenoux—between the lines (station) Brin, looted busily. Some rare things as booty, ham and bacon, and above all wine. The village was a pitiable sight. Bombarded. . . . Wine and more wine. Sacks and cases full. Even wineglasses. The soldiers of every arm shared in the spoils, and plundered to the music of the shells.

October 5. At Loupmont, a fine country house, beautiful room with Persian carpet, slaughtered sow on it; in the bed sucking-pig also slaughtered. Blood running down the stairs.

*German prisoner's diary.*

As a punishment the farm was burnt, and this sad fate must have overtaken many rich and flourishing villages. In a general way it was necessary to order many punishments that were disastrous for the population, sometimes indeed unjustly, and it is unhappily true that the evil elements felt authorised to commit nearly every kind of misdeed. This reproach applies more particularly to the men in charge of the baggage and ammunition trains, who are for the most part worthless stuff, not fit for the front. These men spend whole days of idleness in places, where they often loot the cellars, break into the houses which the terrified inhabitants have abandoned, destroy and befool everything, so that every right-thinking person must be filled with horror at the misery of war. The stories, invented or exaggerated in most cases, of children whose hands have been cut off and outraged women are not, of course, a general indictment of our army; when there is some truth in them they apply only to a few criminals.

*Name and address unknown.*

25 August. About 10 marched to Orchies, arrived there about 4. Houses searched. All civilians taken prisoners. A woman was shot because she did not halt at the word of command, but tried to run away. Hereupon the whole place was set on fire. At 7 o'clock we left Orchies in flames and marched towards Valenciennes.

26 August. Marched off at 9 a.m. towards the eastern entrance of Valenciennes to occupy the town and keep back fugitives. All the male inhabitants from 18 to 48 were arrested and sent to Germany.

“ A REGULAR BRIGAND'S LIFE.”

*Extracts from German diary. No name.*

Aug. 22. In the evening, loud cries of pain from both sides. Oh, war is horrible! Villages blazing, everything plundered, wine, bacon, ham, bread, cigars, &c. Fighting in the forest.

Aug. 24. We always march at break of day, generally after from one to four hours of rest in the open air. In the middle of the day we camp in a village. Every living edible thing is slaughtered. The inhabitants have fled. Everything is pillaged. It looks like the work of robbers.

Aug. 25. From the 24th to the 25th, mounted guard in the church at N. Five French prisoners, among them two officers. The regiment got a day's rest in billets after many long, strenuous days. All the inhabitants have fled. From top to bottom, everything has been looted and nothing remains intact. A regular brigand's life, this. We devour chickens, ducks, geese, and rabbits. It certainly looks like the work of robbers.

It is lawful to take possession of eatables for immediate use, but many of our men, especially those in charge of the baggage transport, stole watches and other valuables. This is abominable, and the more so as they loot so wantonly that what they cannot carry away they trample underfoot and destroy.

Page 33. . . . I visited the castle and saw how our cavalry had plundered it. The night before French troops had been quartered there, and had dined. Now the whole place was the abomination of desolation. All cupboards and chests were broken open and the clothes strewn about. That a lot of plundering was done as a matter of course, especially by the cavalry, who arrive first, seems to me excusable to some extent, but it is absolutely low to smash great mirrors and break up valuable old furniture. . . . Hungry animals were wandering about. . . . Chickens, ducks, pigs, all were carried away, . . . La guerre est la guerre [sic].

Judging by a letter received from home, our folks have an idea that war is a much more humane business than it really is. There is no longer any consideration, any sentimental or aesthetic feeling; all moral sense is deadened.

Page 37. The men loot dreadfully; everything in the houses is turned upside down and often destroyed. Not even small personal ornaments escape. All rights of property are abolished. We are doing infinite injury to our reputation.

FRITZ HOLLMANN.

(Bryce Report, p. 169.)

1st Squadron, 2nd Westphalian Hussar Regiment, No. 11, 9th Cavalry Division, 7th Army Corps. [Extract from letter dated October 11th and written from near Lille.]

“The only good thing is that one need not be thirsty here. We drink five or six bottles of champagne a day, and as to underlinen—only silk, as if one has no more underlinen, one simply goes into a house and changes. Mostly, of course, there are no people in the houses, but when there are any they say: ‘Monsieur, there is no more,’ but for us there is no such thing as ‘no more.’ These poor people are really to be commiserated, but of course it is war. . . . You write about money. We have received no pay since the 1st September. When I get it I will send you 80 marks.” [Judging from what appears to be the envelope of a field post letter pasted into the back of this diary, the diarist's relations reside at Hotel Central, Heiligenhaus, Lower Rhine, and the sender of the letter is Fritz Hollmann. Enclosed with the Hollmann letter is another document—a letter addressed to parents—obviously not in the same handwriting, which contains the following extract]: “We have been very hungry now we are pursuing the Belgians, and we soon shall be in France on the frontier, but we went collecting [for food] and when we came to a farmer they shot at us. Then we went in and took everything away and stabbed them to death. When we got into a village the people shot at us out of the houses, so we burnt the houses, but it is impossible to describe how it looked. God knows what will happen to us in France.”

*Diary of Private Hassemmer, 8th Corps.*

3. 9. 1914. Sommepy (Marne). Horrible massacre. The village burnt to the ground, the French thrown into houses in flames, civilians and all burnt together.



**PORTABLE APPARATUS USED BY GERMANS FOR FLAME-THROWING  
AND SQUIRTING CORROSIVE LIQUIDS.**

Described as "one of the means to be used by pioneers during engagements at short range."



**LARGE FLAME-THROWING APPARATUS CAPTURED BY THE RUSSIANS.**

The flames convert living men into a carbonised mass. When acid is used it burns deeply through the clothes; the skin at once begins to smoke and the flesh falls away from the bones, which become carbonised. The victims rarely survive.

## NOMÉNY.

The undersigned declares on his honour that the statements made by him before a captain of the Staff are absolutely and entirely true.

Of these statements some deal with the military career of the undersigned, some with his activities during the campaign, and others with the conduct of the 8th Bavarian Regiment of Infantry at Nomény on August the 20th and 21st.

The undersigned can give no details of this last matter because on the dates in question he was serving on the Staff of the Brigade at Maily as a cyclist despatch-riding (non-commissioned officer).

Nevertheless, in the course of his journeys he had opportunities of seeing that brutalities had been perpetrated by various soldiers who had strayed from their company.

For instance, he witnessed the following act of a Bavarian soldier, whose name he was unfortunately unable to learn in the haste and confusion; this man shot the father of a family with incredible brutality in the presence of his wife and child.

It was my impression then, and on other occasions, that the officers at Nomény were unable to prevent such acts. As far as I could judge, the crimes committed, which filled all the soldiers who came to Nomény later with horror, must be attributed to abnormal brutes.

(Signed) WILHELM PETERS,  
Lieutenant 8th Bavarian Regiment  
of Infantry (Reserve).

*Extract from the notebook of Private Richard Gerhold, of the 74th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), 4th Reserve Corps, describing the ill-treatment of the Belgian population.*

"I remember and see the moment [of the entry into Belgium] always before me. The whole village was in flames, doors and windows shattered. Everything lying on the ground in the street, save one little house; before the door stood a poor woman with six children, holding up her hands to implore mercy. And day after day it is the same thing."

*Extract from the notebook of Private Max Thomas, of the 107th Regiment of Infantry (8th Saxons), 19th Army Corps, describing the crimes committed by the German troops at Spontin (Belgium).*

August 23, Spontin.

"A company of the 107th and 108th had orders to stay behind and search the village, take the inhabitants prisoners, and burn the houses. At the entrance to the village on the right lay two young girls, one dead, the other severely wounded. The priest too was shot in front of the station. Thirty other men were shot according to martial law, and fifty were made prisoners."

*Extract from the notebook of Non-commissioned Officer Schulz, of the 46th Regiment of Infantry.*

October 15, 1914.

"It was given out at first that we would take up our quarters at Billy, from which place the entire civil popula-

tion had already been expelled, and all household effects either removed or destroyed. This method of making war is absolutely barbarous. I wonder how we can have the face to rail at the conduct of the Russians when we are behaving much worse in France; at every opportunity, on one pretext or another, we pillage and burn. But God is just and sees everything. His mills grind slowly, but they 'grind exceedingly small.'"

*Apparently the diary of a very highly educated man, written on leaves of a commercial order book. No name or address of writer. Evidently some pages missing at the end.*

13th Sept., 1914, Dolhain [close to frontier].—The inhabitants are, to our surprise, courteous, some even friendly.

14th Sept., 1914.—Wake up in Tirlemont on the way to Louvain. Many houses destroyed. In Louvain, what a sad scene! All the houses surrounding the railway station completely destroyed—only some foundation walls still standing. In the station square captured guns. At the end of the main street the town hall, which has been completely preserved with all its beautiful turrets; a sharp contrast. 180 inhabitants are stated to have been shot after they had dug their own graves.

On the 16th Sept., 1914, just behind Mons.—Here also again, innumerable houses have been destroyed, and the population looks bitter and scowling.

*Book belonging to Westphal.*

(No Christian name. Address: Minhaus District, Oldenburg, Holstein).—About 7th or 8th Aug. [Probably just over the Belgian frontier] I had supper in a butcher's shop; fried brains. The people are extremely nice and obliging; cigarettes and tobacco are very cheap here. It was very jolly this evening in our stable. Some are drinking champagne because a bottle does not cost much.

10th Aug. [near Bastogne].—A ganger on the railway shot at our cyclists, but without effect. He was killed by a sergeant-major. In addition, a civilian was also shot down who attacked patrol. He was burnt with his property. The roads were constantly blocked by enormous felled trees. The inhabitants had to remove these under threats of revolvers. In the deep cellars of the convent the smart riflemen found a lot of wine. Unfortunately, the captain objected.

14th Aug., Braibant.—What did not come of its own accord was plundered—fowls, eggs, milk, pigeons, calves. Many jolly happenings during the plundering.

The following extract is less damnable than others, but is included for its concluding sentence:

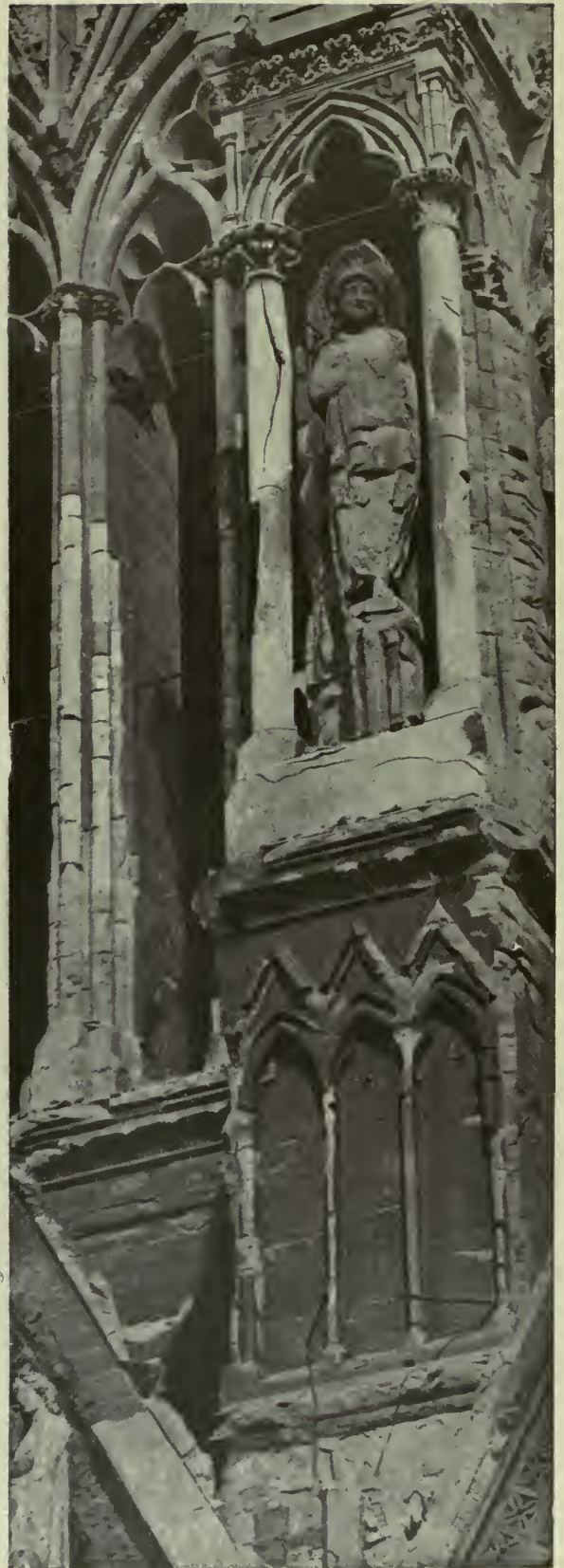
*Extract from the notebook of Private Rudolf Rossberg, of the 101st Grenadier Regiment, 2nd Saxons, 12th Army Corps, describing the looting at Dinant and Laval-Morency.*

Friday.—Apparently a day of rest. We get hold of all sorts of provisions, bread, preserves, wine, cigars, kill geese, chickens, rabbits, &c. . . . I play the piano, and we loot steadily.



**A STATUE OF EVE FROM RHEIMS.**

An example of the many beautiful carvings which adorned the interior and outside of the Cathedral.



**EFFECT OF FIRE ON STONEMWORK**

Part of the façade of Rheims Cathedral irretrievably damaged by fire. The stone is calcinated and flakes off when touched, and the wonderful decoration is spollt.



## VI.—BELGIAN OFFICIAL REPORTS OF MASSACRES AT TAMINES, DINANT, HASTIÈRES, ANDENNE, SURICE, TERMONDE.

THE FOLLOWING are the reports published by the Belgian Government Commission.

### MASSACRES AND MURDERS IN BELGIAN TOWNS.

#### MASSACRE AT TAMINES.

Tamines was a rich and populous village situated on the Sambre between Charleroi and Namur. It was occupied by detachments of French troops on the 17th, 18th, and 19th of August last. On Thursday, the 20th August, a German patrol appeared in front of the suburb of Vilaines. It was greeted by shots fired by French soldiers, and by a party of the Civic Guards of Charleroi. Several Uhlans were killed and wounded, and the rest fled. The people of the village came out of their houses and cried: "Vive la Belgique!" "Vive la France!" In all probability it was this incident which caused the subsequent massacre of Tamines.

Some time afterwards the Germans arrived in force at the hamlet of Alloux. They there burnt two houses and made all the inhabitants prisoners. An artillery combat broke out between the German guns posted at Vilaines and at Alloux and the French guns placed in a battery at Arsimont and at Hame-sur-Heure.

About 5 o'clock on 21st August, the Germans carried the bridge of Tamines, crossed the River Sambre, and began defiling in mass through the streets of the village. About 8 o'clock the movement of troops stopped, and the soldiers penetrated into the houses, drove out the inhabitants, set themselves to sack the place, and then burnt it. The unfortunate peasants who stopped in the village were shot; the rest fled from their houses. The greater part of them were arrested either on the night of the 21st August or on the following morning. Pillage and burning continued all next day (22nd).

#### QUICK MURDER.

On the evening of the 22nd (Saturday) a group of between 400 and 450 men was collected in front of the church, not far from the bank of the Sambre. A German detachment opened fire on them, but as the shooting was a slow business the officers ordered up a machine gun, which soon swept off all the unhappy peasants still left standing. Many of them were only wounded and, hoping to save their lives, got with difficulty on their feet again. They were immediately shot down. Many wounded still lay among the corpses. Groans of pain and cries for help were heard in the bleeding heap. On several occasions soldiers walked up to such unhappy individuals and stopped their groans with a bayonet thrust. At night some who still survived succeeded in crawling away. Others put an end to their own pain by rolling themselves into the neighbouring river.

All these facts have been established by depositions made by wounded men who succeeded in escaping. About 100 bodies were found in the river.

Next day, Sunday, the 23rd, about 6 o'clock in the morning, another party consisting of prisoners made in the village and the neighbourhood were brought into the Square. One of them makes the following deposition:—

"On reaching the Square the first thing that we saw was a mass of bodies of civilians extending over at least 40 yards in length by 6 yards in depth. They had evidently been drawn up in rank to be shot. We were placed before this range of corpses, and were convinced that we too were to be shot.

#### VOLUNTEERS TO BURY THE CORPSES.

"An officer then came forward and asked for volunteers to dig trenches to bury these corpses. I and my brother-in-law and certain others offered ourselves. We were conducted to a neighbouring field at the side of the Square, where they made us dig a trench 15 yards long by 10 broad and 2 deep. Each received a spade. While we were digging the trenches soldiers with fixed bayonets gave us our orders. As I was much fatigued, through not being accustomed to digging, and being faint from hunger, a soldier then brought me a lighter spade, and afterwards filled a bucket of water for us to drink. I asked him if he knew what they were going to do with us. He said that he did not. By the time that the trenches were finished it was about noon. They then gave us some planks, on which we placed the corpses, and so carried them to the trench. I recognised many of the persons whose bodies we were burying. Actually fathers buried the bodies of their sons and sons the bodies of their fathers. The women of the village had been marched out into the Square, and saw us at our work. All round were the burnt houses.

"There were in the Square both soldiers and officers. They were drinking champagne. The more the afternoon drew on the more they drunk, and the more we were disposed to think that we were probably to be shot too. We buried from 350 to 400 bodies. A list of the names of the victims has been drawn up and will have been given to you (the Commissioner).

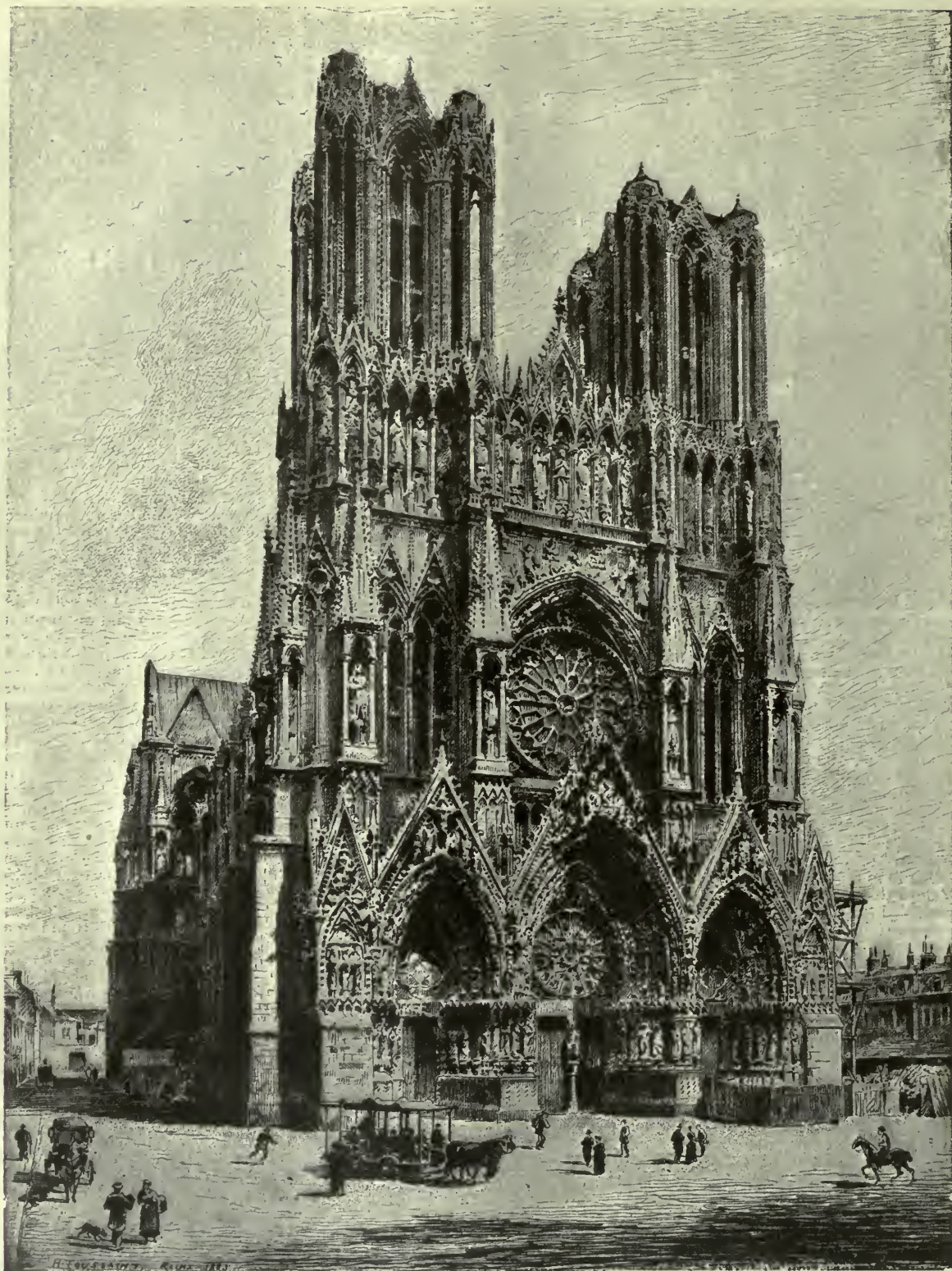
Germans burnt, after sacking them, 264 houses in Tamines. Many persons, including women and children, were burnt or stifled in their own homes. Many others were shot in the fields.

### ANDENNE.

#### Three Hundred Civilians Killed.

#### PILLAGE AND MASSACRE AT ANDENNE.

The town of Andenne is situated on the right bank of the Meuse between Namur and Huy. It is connected by a bridge with the village of Seilles, which is built along the river on the opposite, or left, bank. The German troops who were wishing to invade the territory on the left bank of the Meuse arrived at Andenne on Thursday, 19th August, in the morning. Their advance guard of Uhlans found that the bridge was not available. A



#### RHEIMS CATHEDRAL IN 1913.

An Engraving of Rheims Cathedral, which, although pitifully mutilated, has withstood a hail of shells. With the towers under the protection of the Red Cross flag the building was fired upon on the pretext that it served as an observation post and sheltered French Artillery. M. Pierre Lalo says an observation post was certainly found in the North Tower, but a German observation post with German apparatus was installed there.

regiment of Belgian infantry had blown it up at 8 o'clock on the same morning. The Uhlans retired after having seized the Communal cash box at Andenne and brutally maltreated the Burgomaster, Dr. Camus, an old man of more than 70 years. The burgomaster had several days before taken the most minute precautions to prevent the population from engaging in hostilities. He had posted up everywhere placards ordering non-resistance. All firearms had been collected in the Hotel de Ville, and the local authorities had personally visited certain of the inhabitants to explain their duty to them.

The main body of the German troops arrived at Andenne in the afternoon. The regiment halted in the town and outside it, waiting for the completion of a pontoon bridge, which was not finished till the following morning. The first contact between the troops and the people was quite pacific. The Germans ordered requisitions, which were satisfied. The soldiers at first paid for their purchases and for the drink which they served to them in the cafés. Towards the evening the situation began to grow more strained. Whether it was that discipline was getting relaxed, or that alcohol commenced to produce its effect, the soldiers ceased paying for what they were taking.

#### THE WARNING SHOT.

On Thursday, the 20th August, the bridge was finished and the troops defiled through the town in great numbers in the direction of the left bank. The inhabitants watched them passing from their houses. Suddenly, at 6 o'clock in the evening, a single rifle shot was heard in the street, followed immediately by a startling explosion. The troops halted, their ranks fell into disorder, and nervous men fired haphazard. Presently a machine gun was set up at a corner and commenced to fire against the houses, and later a cannon dropped three shells into the town at three different points.

At the first rifle shot the inhabitants of the streets through which the troops were defiling, guessing what might happen, took refuge in their cellars or, climbing out over the walls of their gardens, sought refuge in the open country or in distant cellars. A certain number of people who would not or could not make their escape were killed in their houses by shots fired from the street, or in some cases by soldiers who burst into their dwellings.

Immediately afterwards commenced the pillage of the houses in the principal streets of the town. Every window shutter and door was broken in. Furniture was smashed and thrown out. The soldiers ran down into the cellars, got drunk there, breaking the bottles of wine that they could not carry away. Finally, a certain number of houses were set on fire. During the night rifle shooting broke out several times. The terrified population lay low in their cellars.

Next day, Friday, the 21st August, at 4 o'clock in the morning, the soldiers spread themselves through the town driving all the population into the streets and forcing men, women, and children to march before them with their hands in the air. Those who did not obey with sufficient promptitude, or did not understand the order given them in German, were promptly knocked down. Those who tried to run away were shot.

#### THE OLD, THE SICK, THE PARALYSED.

Meanwhile the whole population was being driven towards the Place des Tilleuls. Old men, the sick, and the paralysed were all brought there. Some were drawn on wheel-chairs, others pushed on hand-carts, others, again, borne up by their relations. The men were separated from the women and children, then all were searched, but no arms were found on them.

Subsequently the soldiers, on the order of their officers, picked out of the mass some 40 or 50 men who were led off and all shot, some along the bank of the Meuse, and others in front of the police station.

While this scene was going on in the Place des Tilleuls, other soldiers spread themselves through the town, con-

tinuing their work of sack, pillage, and arson. Eight men belonging to the same household were led out into a meadow some 50 yards away from their dwelling, some of them were shot, the rest cut down with blows of an axe. One tall, red-haired soldier with a scar on his face distinguished himself by the ferocity with which he used an axe. A young boy and a woman were shot.

The statistics of the losses at Andenne give the following total: Three hundred were massacred in Andenne and Seilles, and about 300 houses were burnt in the two localities. A great number of inhabitants have fled, Almost every house has been sacked; indeed, the pillage did not end for eight days. Other places have suffered more than Andenne, but no other Belgian town was the theatre of so many scenes of ferocity and cruelty.

## THE SACK OF DINANT

### BELGIAN OFFICIAL REPORT.

*The Town destroyed; 700 killed.*

The town of Dinant was sacked and destroyed by the German army, and its population was decimated on the 22nd, 23rd, 24th, and 25th August.

On 15th August a lively engagement took place at Dinant between the French troops on the left bank of the Meuse and the German troops coming up from the East. On Friday, the 21st, about 9 o'clock in the evening, German troops coming down the road from Ciney entered the town by the Rue St. Jacques. On entering they began firing into the windows of the houses, and killed a workman who was returning to his own house, wounded another inhabitant, and forced him to cry "Long live the Kaiser." They bayoneted a third person in the stomach. They entered the *cafés*, seized the liquor, got drunk, and retired after having set fire to several houses and broken the doors and windows of others. The population was terrorised and stupefied, and shut itself up in its dwellings.

Saturday, 22nd August, was a day of relative calm. All life, however, was at an end in the streets.

#### THE PRELIMINARY MASSACRE.

On the following Sunday, the 23rd, at 6.30 in the morning, soldiers of the 108th Regiment of Infantry invaded the Church of the Premonstratensian Fathers, drove out the congregation, separated the women from the men, and shot 50 of the latter. Between 7 and 9 the same morning the soldiers gave themselves up to pillage and arson, going from house to house and driving the inhabitants into the street. Those who tried to escape were shot. About 9 in the morning the soldiery, driving before them by blows from the butt ends of rifles men, women, and children, pushed them all into the Parade Square, where they were kept prisoners till 6 o'clock in the evening. The guard took pleasure in repeating to them that they would soon be shot. About 6 o'clock a captain separated the men from the women and children. The women were placed in front of a rank of infantry soldiers, the men were ranged along a wall. The front rank of them were then told to kneel, the others remaining standing behind them. A platoon of soldiers drew up in face of these unhappy men. It was in vain that the women cried out for mercy for their husbands, sons and brothers. The officer ordered his men to fire. There had been no inquiry nor any pretence of a trial. About 20 of the inhabitants were only wounded, but fell among the dead. The soldiers, to make sure, fired a new volley into the heap of them. Several citizens escaped this double discharge. They shammed dead for more than two hours, remaining motionless among the corpses, and when night fell succeeded in saving themselves in the hills, Eighty-four corpses were left on the Square and buried in a neighbouring garden.

The day of 23rd August was made bloody by several more massacres. Soldiers discovered some inhabitants of



A BEAUTIFULLY CARVED CAPITAL FROM THE NAVE OF RHEIMS CATHEDRAL.



WRECKAGE OF THE ROOF.

[Photo: Central Press.]

The magnificent timbers of the roof of the Cathedral, models of their kind, were totally consumed by the flames. The lead covering melted and ran off in streams. The straw in the nave, where wounded Germans were bedded for safety, was set on fire and a number perished in the flames. The photograph gives a view above the vaulting, showing the spalled stone arches and débris of timber roof.

the Faubourg St. Pierre in the cellars of a brewery there and shot them.

#### MURDER EN MASSE.

Since the previous evening a crowd of workmen belonging to the factory of M. Himmer had hidden themselves, along with their wives and children, in the cellars of the building. They had been joined there by many neighbours and several members of the family of their employer. About 6 o'clock in the evening these unhappy people made up their minds to come out of their refuge, and defiled all trembling from the cellars with the white flag in front. They were immediately seized and violently attacked by the soldiers. Every man was shot on the spot. Almost all the men of the Faubourg de Leffe were executed *en masse*. In another part of the town 12 civilians were killed in a cellar. In the Rue en Ile a paralytic was shot in his armchair. In the Rue Enfer the soldiers killed a young boy of 14.

In the Faubourg de Neffe the viaduct of the railway was the scene of a bloody massacre. An old woman and all her children were killed in their cellar. A man of 65 years, his wife, his son, and his daughter were shot against a wall. Other inhabitants of Neffe were taken in a barge as far as the rock of Bayard and shot there, among them a woman of 83 and her husband.

A certain number of men and women had been locked up in the court of the prison. At 6 in the evening a German machine gun, placed on the hill above, opened fire on them, and an old woman and three other persons were brought down.

To sum up, the town of Dinant is destroyed. It counted 1,400 houses; only 200 remain. The manufactories where the artisan population worked have been systematically destroyed. Rather more than 700 of the inhabitants have been killed; others have been taken off to Germany, and are still retained there as prisoners. The majority are refugees scattered all through Belgium.

### A PERSONAL NARRATIVE.

The Procureur du Roi of Dinant survived the massacres, and was able to furnish the Belgian Government with the experiences which follow:

On Dinant the Germans fell with fury, because before they occupied the town they experienced resistance from Belgian and French troops. The story of the German entry into the town is told in the 20th Report of the Belgian Commission of Inquiry by Monsieur Tschoffen, Procureur du Roi of Dinant. It is told also in two closely printed pages of the Report giving the names of old men, of women, and of children murdered by the Germans at Dinant. The list of old men begins with the name of Emile Arès, aged 66 years; it ends forty-four names further on with that of Félix Simonet, aged 73 years. The printed tombstone to the children is of exactly the same length, beginning with little Félix Bolleux, who was a year and eight months, and ending with Nelly Struvay, who was 2½ years. The women and girls have a larger roll. There were 66 of them. So that the German massacre of the defenceless of Dinant numbered 154 victims.

The Germans entered Dinant on the night of the 21st-22nd of August, at first a few only in motor-cars. They signalled their arrival by firing at sleeping houses, setting fire to fifteen or twenty of them, and wounding a few people. On the 23rd, an engagement between French and German troops being in progress, more German troops arrived in the town, marched through the streets expelling the inhabitants from the houses, burning a number of dwellings, and herding old men, women, and children into a large house and stables where they could be imprisoned. They arrested some of the male inhabitants, including a paralysed judge, and shot them. The familiar accusation was raised that the inhabitants were firing on the German soliders. More civilian prisoners were made.

#### DINANT: A PERSONAL NARRATIVE.

About 6 o'clock these accusations became menaces. All the civilian prisoners were to be shot (apparently because the French troops were still firing on the Germans), and the men were separated from the women. About 8 o'clock the firing from the French died down. The Germans made use of this excellent opportunity to rob a number of their captives under the pretext of searching them. M. Tschoffen was robbed of 800 francs; and the prisoners, of whom he was one, were then marched past burning buildings and corpses by the wayside to Herbuchenne by Mt. St. Nicholas. Thence a number of them were transported to Germany. Such is M. Tschoffen's own testimony as an eye-witness. He has collected evidence in his magisterial capacity from other sources.

The Germans came by four principal routes. The first of these led into the quarter of Dinant named "Fonds de Leffe." Here they burnt the houses and killed the inhabitants, dragging the people from the Prémontrés Church and shooting them as well as a priest. Of the population of this quarter nine remain.

Similar scenes of fire and slaughter took place in the Rue St. Jacques, where the second road by which the Germans came débouches. One building remains here.

In the Rue du Tribunal, where Saxon troops were the assassins, the inhabitants were marched along, hands up, and exposed to the fire of the French. The French ceased their fire, the Germans continued it—on the inhabitants. Twenty-nine were killed.

In the quarter of "Penant" the inhabitants were arrested as soon as the Germans arrived, and were collected near Roches-Bayard. In this quarter a lively engagement was being conducted between the French and German forces. The Germans revenged themselves for the French fire by setting up their prisoners, men, women, and children, against a wall and shooting them. Eighty people were killed in this execution. Those who survived were carried to Germany; some of the wounded were thrown into the ditch with the dead.

These were the chief features of the massacre of Dinant, which was also burnt, raped, and pillaged.

### HASTIÈRES AND SURICE.

#### MEN, WOMEN, AND CHILDREN.

On 23rd August the Germans entered the village of Hastières-par-delà. They arrested Dr. Halloy, a surgeon of the Red Cross, and shot him. Crossing the street, they went to the house of Alphonse Aigret, a butcher, drove him out, his wife and his children, and shot him and his elder son. Next they went to the farm of Jules Rifon, took him out of his cellar, where he had hidden with his daughters, and shot him. They also killed the farmer Bodson and his two sons, with ten other inhabitants of the village. The place was then sacked and the greater part of the houses burned. The number of persons killed or wounded was very large.

On the 24th August the village of Surice was occupied by the German troops. At about 11 p.m. they set fire to some of the houses. Next morning, at about 6 o'clock, the soldiers broke open doors and windows with the butts of their rifles, and forced all the inhabitants to come out. They were led off in the direction of the church. On the way several most inoffensive people were fired upon. For example, the old choirman, Charles Colot, aged 83, was shot as he came out of his door; the soldiers rolled his body in a blanket and set fire to it.

#### A GHASTLY EXECUTION.

Mademoiselle Aline Dicricz, of Tenham, gives the following account of what was done with the villagers of Surice: On arriving at Fosses the party were led to a piece of fallow ground—they numbered between 50 and 60 persons of both sexes. "It was about 7.15 a.m. when the men and



[Photo : Newspaper Illustrations.]

**CALCULATED VANDALISM.**

President Poincaré's chateau at Sampigny in Lorraine bombarded and sacked by the Germans.



[Photo : Topical

**MORE WANTON DESTRUCTION.**

Remains of a French farmer's homestead on the site of which the old people have constructed a shed to serve as residence.

the women were separated. An officer came up, who said to us in French with a strong German accent, 'You all deserve to be shot; a young girl of 15 has just fired on one of our commanders. But the court-martial has decided that only the men shall be executed; the women will be kept prisoners.'

"The scene that followed passes all description; there were eighteen men standing in a row; beside the parish priests of Anthée and Onhaye, and the Abbé Gaspiard, there was our own priest, M. Poskin, and his brother-in-law, M. Schmidt, then Doctor Jacques and his son Henri, aged just 16, then Gaston Burniaux, the clerk's son, and Leonard Soumoy; next them two men named Balbeur and Billy, with the 17-year-old son of the latter; last two men from Onhaye and Dinant who had taken refuge in Surice, and two people more whom I did not know. M. Schmidt's little boy of 14 was nearly put into the line—the soldiers hesitated, but finally shoved him away in a brutal fashion. At this moment I saw a young German soldier—this I vouch for—who was so horror-struck that great tears were dropping on to his tunic; he did not wipe his eyes for fear of being seen by his officer, but kept his head turned away

#### SURICE: AN EYE-WITNESS.

"Some minutes passed; then under our eyes and amid the shrieks of women who were crying, 'Shoot me, too: shoot me with my husband!' and the wailing of the children, the men were lined up on the edge of the hollow way which runs from the high road to the bottom of the village. They waved last greetings to us, some with their hands, others with their hats or caps. The young Henri Jacques was leaning on the shoulder of one of the priests, as if to seek help and courage from him; he was sobbing, 'I am too young; I can't face death bravely.' Unable to bear the sight any longer, I turned my back to the road and covered my eyes with my hands. The soldiers fired their volley, and the men fell in a heap. Someone said to me, 'Look, they are all down!' But they were not all shot dead; several were finished off by having their skulls beaten in with rifle butts. Among these was the priest of Surice, whose head (as I was afterwards told) was dreadfully opened out.

"When the massacre was over the Germans plundered the corpses. They took from them watches, rings, purses and pocket books. Madame Schmidt told me that her husband had on him about 3,000 francs, which was stolen. Dr. Jacques had also a good sum on him, though his wife could not say exactly how much.

"After this some more German soldiers brought up a man named Victor Cavillot, and shot him before he reached the spot where the others were lying; they fired on him, and I saw him double up and fall into the hollow way."

## IN NAMUR PROVINCE.

#### A SUMMARY.

The reports give no more than an incomplete picture of the German ravages and crimes in the province of Namur. We lack detailed knowledge of what went on in three of the six cantons which form the district of Namur. The total of 800 persons killed and 1,160 houses burned in that district may have to be largely increased. In the district of Dinant, that town itself and 21 villages have been destroyed. In the district of Philippeville 20 villages have been sacked, plundered, and more or less burned down. In the whole province, which has 364,000 inhabitants, nearly 2,000 unoffending people—men, women, and children—have been massacred.

#### THE SCENE AT BUEKEN.

At Bueken the massacre took place long after that hamlet had been occupied by the German troops. They had been staying there for ten days, and the panic-stricken inhabitants had been doing their best to keep them in good temper by every possible means. On 29th August the men were all arrested and led to a meadow, with their hands tied behind their backs. Then, according to the evidence of the witness who described the scene to us, eighteen men were shot, including an old man of 70 and his three sons. They were executed in the presence of their wives and children. Before the volley was fired an officer read out a sort of sentence of death, in which it was declared that one man was accused of being in possession of a book belonging to a German soldier. This book had been left by the soldier in the house where he had been quartered for the last ten days. Another man was declared to have been found carrying part of a German cartridge. The women, in the hope of saving the lives of their husbands tried to call out, "Long live Germany and the Kaiser." When the massacre was over, the women and children were shut up in a small room, so small that no one could lie down. These poor folks were confined there for two days and given neither food nor drink. Meanwhile the village was entirely destroyed

#### GELRODE.

At Gelrode, seven young men were seized in the church, where the village people had sought shelter at the enemy's approach; they were taken out and shot, after having been slashed about with sabres

#### ERMETON.

At Ermeton, the Abbé Schlögel, parish priest of Hastières; M. Ponthières, a professor of the University of Louvain, and the village schoolmaster, with certain others, were shot

#### DEATH ROLL OF LEBBEKE AND ST. GILLES,

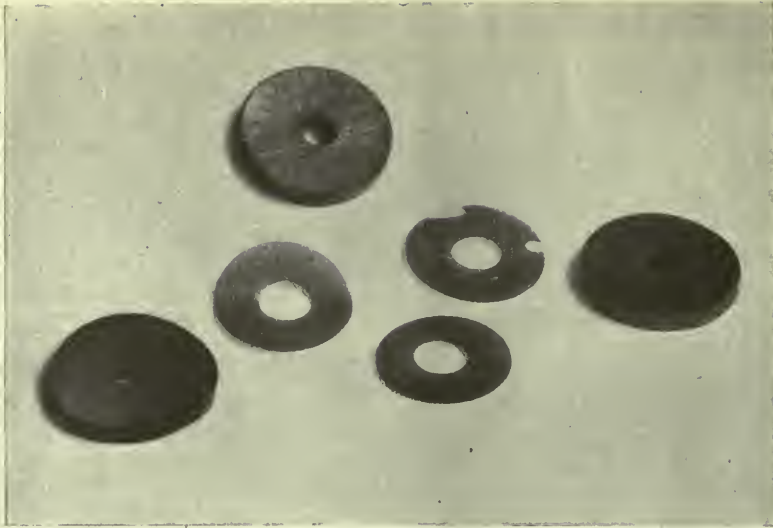
Twenty-five people of Lebbeke and St. Gilles were murdered by the Germans on their own lands. Excepting four men (Hertogh, Van Malderen, de Boekh, and Mannaert), all were killed by blows from bayonets, picks, or hatchets. Most of them were so disfigured that it was only possible to identify their bodies by the objects found on them. Twelve men, all of Lebbeke (Camille Verhulst, Theophile Keppens, Arthur Bovyn, Arthur Verhulst, Pierre van Eyberghe, Camille Lissens, Octave Verhulst, Edmond Hofman, Gustave Hofman, Joseph Pierait, Veldeman, and Van den Berghe or Vancaanteren—the identity of this body was uncertain), had all taken refuge in the farm of Octave Verhulst; they were tied together and led to the back of the farm, where they were murdered. Their bodies were all thrown into the same trench. Six men of St. Gilles (Achille Reye, Alphonse Van Damme, Prosper Van Dooren, Ernest De Kinder, Ernest De Stobelaere, François Mertens) were tied arm to arm and conducted to Lebbeke. The Germans put out their eyes and then killed them with their bayonets. Three others (Van Weyenberg, Louis Van Damme, François Moens) were killed by sabre cuts on the head, in the presence of their wives and children.

The Communes of Lebbeke and of St. Gilles-lez-Termonde contain, with the town of Termonde itself, a total of over 26,000 inhabitants. These places, together with the village of Appels (with 2,100 inhabitants, lying west of Termonde), endured terrible sufferings.

#### THE PRIESTS AT SURICE.

At Surice, while the village was burning, a group of some 50 or 60 persons of both sexes was driven together. The 18 men were separated from the women, and told that they were to be shot. Among them were the parish priests of Anthée, Onhaye, and Surice, and another ecclesiastic

\* From the narrative of Mademoiselle Aline Dieriez, of Tenham, annexed to the Report of the Commissioners' Session of Dec. 18th, 1914.



**INCENDIARY PASTILLES CARRIED BY GERMAN SOLDIERS.**

They are made of nitro-cellulose, specially prepared. Some were found among the ruins of houses fired at Termonde.



*Photo: Sport and General.*

**THE SACKING OF GENERAL LYAUTEY'S PROPERTY.**

The house belonging to General Lyautey at Crévic, which was specially singled out for destruction. The Germans entered the house led by an officer crying aloud: "We want Madame and Mademoiselle Lyautey in order to cut their throats." A captain levelling his revolver at a certain M. Vogin's throat threatened to shoot him and throw him into the flames, to accompany a murdered fellow-citizen (an old gentleman, M. Liégay, 78 years of age, whose body was found in the ruins with a bullet wound under his chin). The officer added, "Come and see the property of General Lyautey, who is in Morocco—it is burning." Torches and rockets were used to fire part of Crévic.



There were fathers and sons side by side. Opposite them were their mothers and daughters wailing and praying. The massacre was carried out under their eyes; all the men fell together, mowed down by a volley. One or two showed signs of life, whereupon the soldiers finished them off with the butt-ends of their rifles. They then turned out the pockets of the dead, and stripped off some of their clothes.

## THE DOUBLE TRAGEDY OF TERMONDE.

### FIRST BOMBARDMENT, SACK, AND PILLAGE.

(4th, 5th, 6th September, 1914.)

On 2nd September a German patrol came as far as Lebbeke. Under the pretext that they were avenging six German soldiers, shot by the Belgian troops on the lands of Lebbeke, they set on fire three farms in the hamlet of Hijzide.

On 4th September, at four in the morning, the people of Lebbeke were roused by the sound of lively firing. The German army was attacking the place, which was defended by some Belgian outposts, who soon drew back to the Scheldt. At seven the Germans entered the village, breaking windows, smashing in doors and hunting away women and children. The men were dragged from their homes to serve as a living shield for the advancing troops.

### THE CHURCH SHELLED.

Soon after the village was bombarded. The church was taken as a special target, and was hit by several shells which caused grave damage. About ten houses were seriously injured. Then pillage and arson commenced. Twenty farms or dwelling houses were set on fire, and all the houses in the centre of the place were plundered. Only the pleadings which the burgomaster addressed to General Grönen saved the village from complete destruction. Great part of the Commune of St. Gilles-lez-Termonde was also devastated.

At 9.15 a.m. the German army began to shell Termonde, and soon afterwards it entered the town by the Rue de l'Eglise, the Rue de Malines and the Rue de Bruxelles. German troops advanced to the Civil Hospital, and there arrested as hostages Dr. Van Winckel, President of the Red Cross Association, who was attending to the wounded, and also the Rev. M. Van Poucke, the Chaplain, and M. César Schellekens, the Secretary of the United Civil Hospitals. They were taken to the centre of the place, accompanied by various townsmen, who were arrested on the way thither.

Meanwhile the soldiery were pillaging cellars and the shops of confectioners, bakers, grocers, and spirit merchants. The window frames gave way under the accumulated mass of bottles.

### ROBBERY UNDER ARMS.

One company, under a captain, burst into the offices of the "Dender Central Bank," a private company, and searched them from end to end. Soon after, a special squad entered the bank, and blew open the safe in the room of the manager, from which frs. 2400 were taken.

They then forced the wrought-iron gate of the bank cellar, which contained the boxes deposited by private customers. But there was a second door to the cellar which resisted their burglarious efforts. It was only the great solidity of this structure which preserved the private safes below.

Meanwhile General von Boehn was posing for his photograph on the stairs of the Town Hall!

At about 3 p.m. some pioneers (of the 9th Battalion) set fire to the building-yards of Termonde, and to four groups of five dwelling-houses in the centre of the town. After this the German officers began to direct those inhabitants who still remained in the place to take their departure, as the town was to be completely destroyed. About 5 p.m. the German commander ordered all the criminals in the gaol, to the number of over 135, to be set at liberty. They spread over the neighbourhood.

### BURNING THE TOWN.

Next day (5th September) began the complete destruction of the town by fire, under the direction of a Major von Sommerfeld. The hospital was not spared; it was drenched with petroleum and set alight. The sick, wounded and old people were carried out; but one epileptic man perished in the blaze. The chapel of the Almshouse (*Béguinage*), a building of the late sixteenth century, was set on fire the same day.

On Sunday, 6th September, the commandant, Major von Sommerfeld, ordered that the destruction should proceed. As at Louvain and Andenne, all the better quarters of the town, where the soldiers would find the most plunder, were set on fire.

It was only on 7th September that the conflagration ceased, the pioneers—so a German officer said—having to go off to destroy roadways. Most of the surviving houses were found to bear the inscription "Nicht anzünden" (Not to be burned). This day a German sentry was killed in front of Vertongen's factory, by a Belgian soldier firing from the dyke on the further side of the Scheldt. Major von Förstner observed to a notable of Termonde: "There are still the factories round the town; if your soldiers hit another of our men they shall be destroyed, as the town has been."

On 4th September the Germans had also shelled for more than an hour the little village of Appels, though no Belgian force was posted there. A child was killed by a fragment of shrapnel.

### THE FINAL DESTRUCTION OF TERMONDE IN OCTOBER, 1914.

After the fall of Antwerp the Germans occupied Termonde in force. They drove out the few inhabitants who remained, and proceeded to plunder all that was left in the town; the factories were robbed of all finished stuffs and of certain raw material. The Law Courts, the Arsenal, and almost all the few private houses that still stood intact were set on fire.

It is clear from the statement that is herein set forth that the town of Termonde was systematically destroyed, though certain German newspapers deny it. It was destroyed by methodical arson, accompanied by pillage. Even allowing that there was a military necessity for the bombardment, that bombardment only completed the devastating work of the German pioneer-troops.



**WOMEN AND CHILDREN OF LOUVAIN DRIVEN BEFORE TROOPS ON PARADE.**  
The inhabitants of the University town were driven forth, and the usual murders and deeds of savagery accompanied the organised incendiarism and plundering.



**SUSPECTED OF ESPIONAGE.**  
Cavalryman bringing in a barefooted peasant. To be a suspect was to merit death, when Belgians were shot offhand on the flimsiest pretext or on no pretext at all.

## VII.—GERMAN OFFICIAL ADMISSIONS OF MASSACRES IN BELGIUM.

**T**HUS THERE ARE THREE DEGREES of evidence of the atrocities which the German Army has committed.

There is the evidence of the Belgians themselves who were the witnesses of them and the sufferers by them, as well as the evidence of French people similarly circumstanced; and of British, French, and Belgian soldiers who were witnesses of the atrocities or who became aware of them by the results. There is, secondly, the evidence gathered from the diaries and notebooks of German soldiers who were killed or taken prisoners. There is, lastly, the evidence officially taken by the German Government itself, which had power to summon and did summon hundreds of witnesses from the German Army who had been present at the places and on the occasions when the atrocities took place.

This, the third class of evidence, cannot by any possibility be explained away. It is like the skull of the murdered man which was thrust into the murderer's face; the sight of it shut the lying lips. Collected by the Germans last year, with a view to refuting, for the benefit of neutrals and of their own people, the more terrible of the charges brought against them, it was published in Berlin last May under the title "Offences against International Law in the Conduct of the War by the Belgians." This White Book of the Germans has been examined by Mr. Grimwood Mears, one of the joint secretaries to Lord Bryce's Committee, and his review of some of its contents has been published.\* From it are now selected first the following German account of what the Germans did at Dinant:—

### WOMEN AND CHILDREN AT DINANT

Lieut. von Rochow states that he arrived at Les Rivages (at Dinant) at nightfall on the 23rd and saw at the Ferry a great heap of bodies. He continues: "In the course of the evening, when the crossing had been begun, and things were quieter, we noticed that several wounded people were lying among them. These were brought away. I myself took a girl of about eight years who had a wound in her face, and an elderly woman who had been shot in the upper part of the thigh to the women who had been taken prisoners, and handed them over to a doctor." Staff-Surgeon Dr. Petrenz came on this great heap of bodies without knowing who had shot them: "I have heard," he says, "that the Grenadier Regiment No. 101 carried out an execution there. Among the people who were shot were some women, but by far the greater number were young lads. Under the heap I discovered a girl of about five years of age, alive and without any injuries. I took her out and brought her down to the house where the women were. She took chocolate, was quite happy, and was clearly unaware of the seriousness of the situation. I then searched the heap of bodies to see whether any other children were underneath. But we only found one girl of about ten years of age, who had a wound in the lower part of the thigh. I had her wound dressed and brought her at once to the women."

Here there is no attempt whatever at concealment on the part of the Germans. Women and children were shot.

\* William Heinemann, Ltd

The staff-surgeon seems a little disturbed by it, but not much. He alludes to an "execution" as if that explained everything. In the eyes of the Germans it did. Witness the next extract:—


"The commander of the Grenadier Regiment No. 101 made sure of a large number of persons out of the nearest houses in order to use them as hostages in the event of any hostile action by the population. It was made clear to them that they would answer with their lives for the safety of the troops. . . . The men were put up against a garden wall to the left of the Ferry Station, and the women and children taken with them out of the houses a little further down stream. In the meantime crossing the river and building the bridge went on. When the bridge was advanced some 40 metres, out of the houses of Les Rivages and the rocky eminences close by, south of the 'Rocher Bayard,' some franc-tireurs fired on the Grenadiers, who were in close masses waiting to cross, and the Pioneers who were at work. The consequence was a great commotion and confusion. In consequence of this, all the male hostages assembled against the garden wall were shot."

Anyone, not a German, must read these official admissions with a feeling akin to stupefaction. What possessed the Germans to publish anything so damning to themselves, seeing that their Commission was a white-washing inquiry? The answer to that is that the Germans did not perceive that they were condemning themselves out of their own mouths. Everything is explained for them, everything palliated by the one word "franc-tireur." Seven hundred civilians in all were killed at Dinant. Granted, say the Germans, but franc-tireurs fired on our troops. They admit in so many words that there was "a great commotion and confusion"; they do not deny that French troops were on the left bank of the Meuse at the time, were possessed of rifles of long range, and certainly of machine guns. They do not bring forward a scrap of evidence to show that one Belgian civilian was found with a gun in his hands. They utter the one word "franc-tireur," without ever substantiating the fact, and let that account for the murder of 700 people and the pillage and destruction of their homes. Divisional Commander von Edler urged Captain Wilke "to proceed with the utmost ruthlessness against the fanatical franc-tireurs"—whose fanaticism had been successful only in inflicting a single doubtful casualty on Captain Wilke's company—and Captain Wilke regarded his task as having been accomplished "after about fifty men had been shot and the principal street at Leffe (Dinant) had been made impassable in view of the burning houses." It was because of unattested casualties, and apparently no deaths at all, that German commanders ordered the murder of Dinant's unarmed men, women, and children.

### THE TRADESMAN OF HAMBURG.

If, however, the Germans had troubled to inquire into the guilt or innocence of their captives at Dinant, the executions would have taken place much the same. At Louvain they instituted a form of trial. It is described by one of their witnesses in the White Book—Richard



VICTIMS OF THE MASSACRES AT ANDENNE. 

In all 300 persons were murdered in this town.

Gruner. Richard Gruner is described as a tradesman of Hamburg; he was twenty-three years of age, and was employed as the driver of an ambulance waggon. To him Captain Allbrecht handed over "from 100 to 200 persons or thereabouts, who were given to me for examination and trial." The point of view with which this young tradesman of twenty-three undertook the gravest and most momentous duty that can be assigned by one human being to another is described in his own words: "The persons brought to trial must have acted in some way in a suspicious manner, otherwise they would never have been brought to trial at all." The inquiry was conducted at night—in the open air, in haste, and amidst confusion and uproar. The witnesses were in all cases on one side only, and that side that of the German Army. They were invariably soldiers. The word of any two soldiers who stated that a Belgian had fired sent that man to his death. In vain did he urge that no arms were found in his house or cartridges on him; in vain did he ask for breathing space in which to call evidence as to his position and known peaceful character, or other matters which would tend to show that the soldiers were wrongly accusing him. Richard Gruner came to an immediate and invariable decision. The word of two German soldiers was enough—the man was executed. In this way, on Gruner's own figures, from 80 to 100 persons were killed. "Amongst them," he says, "it is possible that there were some 10 or 15 priests."

This is the inquiry—which in itself is nothing short of an outrage—on which the German Government prides itself and talks of the shooting of these people as having been carried out in accordance "with the custom of war." But in the evidence which German soldiers offer about Louvain there is not the inexplicable stupidity which marks their published statements about Dinant. Officers and men continually assert that they broke into house after house and captured civilians "with weapons in their hands." On three occasions only an officer speaks to seeing a weapon produced by a soldier who said he had taken it from a civilian. *But not one civilian is alleged to have shot a German soldier with that weapon; not one German soldier was hurt by these desperate franc-tireurs.* The only person hurt was the civilian who always tamely submitted to be dragged out and shot. The notorious Major von Manteuffel was one of the witnesses who speaks glibly "of a tremendous gun fire" being opened on the German troops. But he adds that (as the result of this fire) he believes three men were wounded in the legs. "Fearful firing" is a term used by several of the witnesses. But nobody was hurt by it. Bombs were thrown. But they hit no one. Maxims were turned on the German lambs. But the maxims were never found.

#### AERSCHOT.

All the evidence produced by the Germans to excuse the massacres at Dinant and Louvain boils down to the alleged wounding of an unnamed but small handful of German soldiers, whose injuries are not established as having been inflicted by Belgian civilians. At Aerschot, however, they have one certain death, that of Colonel Stenger, who was shot while on the balcony of the burgomaster's house on August 19. The circumstances have been fully described in the Belgian Official Reports, and are substantially the same as those in the German Report. The burgomaster had himself suggested that Colonel Stenger and the staff should occupy his house in the market place, because it was the best available; the German Report (evidence of Captain Schwartz) adds that the burgomaster's wife received the invaders in the most friendly manner, and that the burgomaster was warned (Colonel Jenrich's evidence) that he would be shot if an attack on the German troops by the inhabitants took place.

Colonel Jenrich carried out his threat; the burgomaster was shot, together with his brother and his son, a lad of 15 years of age. There is not a shred of evidence to connect any of these three with the death of Colonel

Stenger; the house was searched for weapons; none was found.

Nobody was killed but Colonel Stenger; not one other German soldier. Captain Karge alleges that firing took place from a house in the market place; and that he broke in and set fire to it. But as far as can be gathered from his description, the house proved to be an empty one. No one was arrested in the house, or issuing from it. However, Captain Karge was not to be balked. *He arrested people from other houses.* Here are his own words:—

"When I left the burning house, several civilians, including a young priest, had been arrested from the adjoining houses. I had these brought to the market place where, in the meantime, my company of field gendarmes had collected. I then put the columns on the march out of the town, took command of all prisoners, among whom I set free the women, boys, and girls. I was commanded by a staff officer (a section commander of the Field Artillery Regiment No. 17) to shoot the prisoners. Then I made some of my gendarmes arrange the columns and keep them in motion out of the town, while others escorted the prisoners and took them out of the town. Here, at the exit, a house was burning, and by the light of it I had the culprits—88 in number, after I had separated out three cripples—shot."

The execution of 88 people was, however, far too light a blood tax for the death of Colonel Stenger, and later the male inhabitants of Aerschot were rounded up again, and, without any inquiry, every third man was shot. We need not at this point oppose to the German allegations those which have been made by Belgian witnesses, beyond noting that the Belgian explanation was that Colonel Stenger was killed by a chance shot from the indiscriminate firing of the German soldiery, who had celebrated their entry into Aerschot in the usual manner by getting rapidly drunk. Not one question is ever put to a witness in the German Inquiry with regard to drunkenness, though it is proved by German diaries, and cannot by any means be denied. This omission is significant; but the really significant thing is the admission made by the Germans of the reprisals they inflicted, and the manner of them.

#### ANDENNE.

Throughout the German Inquiry, and especially in its summarising memorandum, a great violence of language is used. Such phrases as "tremendous gun fire," "opposition of the greatest obstinacy" (from the poor sheep of Dinant), "fearful firing" (at unhappy Louvain) are freely used to describe what provoked the Germans at the towns where they burnt and slew. At Aerschot "mad firing" is alleged to have broken out; the cruel murder of 150 people and the sacking of the town is summarised as "the Belgian Insurrection at Aerschot"—thus suppressed. At Andenne 300 persons were massacred, and therefore the German Report again alleges an insurrection, and that "the demeanour of the inhabitants was positively devilish," that "a ferocious fire broke out on all sides on the unsuspecting German troops," that "machine guns sent their murderous bullets into the files of the soldiery," that "hand-bombs and hand-grenades were rained down."

Will it be believed that in spite of all this devastating ferocity of attack on the defenceless Germans, *no evidence is offered of the death or wounding of one man?* The machine guns were never found. They never will be found, because they did not exist. At Andenne there is no evidence offered of a plot, or of an insurrection; there is nothing to excuse, to explain, or to palliate the murder of the 234 persons who were shot by the banks of the Meuse in batches, or who were done to death in their houses—nothing beyond the wild and whirling words we have quoted. And no word is said by the Germans of the systematic pillage which went on for eight days.

Nowhere in all this official German document is there any other excuse beyond the word of doom—"franc-

tireur." But the Germans knew beforehand that there might be isolated occasions when some Belgians roused to fury would shoot, and, even according to their own war book, they would not be justified in shooting down hundreds of people without inquiry as a punishment for such occurrences—if they did take place. But, as Mr. Grimwood Mears points out, appropriate punishment for injury inflicted on their troops was not their intention then any more than it is their case now. They assert now that what they did was not reprisal for the isolated acts of a few Belgian fanatics, but was the suppression of organised insurrection. They suggest that the insurrection was fomented and directed by the Belgian Government. That is a lie, and not even a clever lie. In all the 300 folio pages of evidence in their White Book there is not one word of proof that the insurrections were

organised, and the organisation is as invisible as the machine guns. It was only the Germans who had machine guns, and they used them to expedite the execution of batches of civilians. But two things stand out from this ineffably stupid publication. The first is that the murdering and ravaging began because the German soldiers were in a state of neurotic panic about "franc-tireurs"; the second is that massacres, having passed from the hands of the soldiery into the abler, cooler hands of their commanders, became organised. They were organised because it was hoped by the Germans that the Belgian Government, to save their people, would make peace, and so, by expediting the march of the German armies through Belgium, unresisted by the Belgian Army, would give them the time of which they were badly in need.

## VIII.—THE USE OF CIVILIANS AS SCREENS.

### WOMEN AND CHILDREN.

**E**VIDENCE that the Germans drove civilians in front of them as screens against the enemy's fire comes from all sides. The first instances are those whose testimony appears in the Bryce Report.

#### RAILWAY EMPLOYEE (D 96).

At Louvain I was taken with my wife and two children by the Germans into a brickfield. There we found 16 other men—civilians. On the way, my son aged 16 was wounded in the body by the bayonet of one of the German soldiers accompanying us, and on arriving at the brickfield the boy fainted from loss of blood. After we arrived, another man, also a civilian, was brought into the brickfield, and I saw the Germans kill him; they shot him with a revolver.

Afterwards the Germans tied our hands behind our backs, and having selected five, including myself, we were made to march in front of the German troops, and were directed by one of the officers to guide the troops to Herent. The officer told us that he did this so that if the troops were fired on we should be the first to fall. We were pushed along at the point of the bayonet.

#### ARMOURER (G 1), MEUSE.

On the 12th or 13th August I was on the heights above the Meuse. I saw, about 200 yards away, the Germans making men and children march in front of them and pass between the Forts of Pontisse and Fléron, in which the Belgian soldiers then were. The Belgian commander observed the civilians near the Fort of Fléron, and, as a result, the Belgian soldiers did not dare to fire upon them. I was informed by several, whose names I cannot give, that none of the civilians were injured by the Germans. I saw the civilians in front of the German troops when I was near Visé. They were being physically forced along by the Germans. I could see no women, but I could see that the men were civilians.

#### BELGIAN SOLDIER (G 2), TIRLEMONT.

The Germans arrived from Tirlemont. As they arrived I withdrew with my patrol to the railway gates. The

road was commanded by two mitrailleuses posted at the gates. As the Germans advanced I saw two women and five children walking along the road 50 metres ahead of the German cavalry, who were in their advance. We could not fire the mitrailleuses as we should have hit them. One of the women was hit by one of the Belgian riflemen. The women told the commander when they arrived at our post that the Germans had forced them to leave their houses and walk in front of the troops. I was standing by the commander at the time and heard this said

#### BRITISH OFFICER (G 4), RETREAT FROM MONS.

On Sunday, August 23rd, my company was ordered to throw a barricade across a road leading from the south of Mons. When we had finished we waited for the advance of the Germans. Some civilians reported to us that they were coming down a road in front of us. On looking in that direction we saw, instead of German troops, a crowd of civilians—men, women, and children—waving white handkerchiefs and being pushed down the road in front of a large number of German troops. I have no doubt whatever that the Germans had deliberately put these civilians in front of themselves for the purpose of protecting themselves from our fire, and had compelled them to wave their handkerchiefs for the same object. The Germans could not have advanced apart from the protection afforded them by the civilians, as the street was quite straight and commanded by our rifle fire at a range of about 700 to 800 yards. The civilians were driven in front of the German troops until the latter reached a side street, into which they disappeared

#### BRITISH SOLDIER (G 6), MONS.

I was behind a barricade in an avenue in Mons on August 23rd, the first day when fighting with the British force began. The Scottish had been fighting with Germans outside and came back past us, and warned us that the Germans were wearing English military top-coats. We saw the Germans coming on in English top-coats, and for a long time it was doubtful whether they were Germans. They first took shelter in some houses on the left. Eventually when the Germans advanced down the avenue they placed women and children in front of them. They came on as it were in mass, with the women and children massed

in front of them. They seemed to be pushing them on, and I saw them shoot down women and children who refused to.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (G 9), MONS.

In Mons, on the 34th Sunday in the year (Sunday 23rd August), I saw 200 Belgian civilians taken prisoners by the Germans. There was a battle going on at the time between the English and the Germans, and the Germans used the Belgian civilians as a screen to prevent the English from firing. I was standing in the Rue de la Bece (? Bisse). The Germans were coming down a main street, the name of which I do not know. The English were in the streets all around. I saw some of the Belgians killed; six of them were shot by the Germans because they tried to get away. I cannot say what happened to the rest of them. They continued marching in front of the Germans until they got out of my sight. The Belgians were men of all ages; there were no women or children.

AT THE POINT OF THE BAYONET.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (G 26), WILLEBROECK.

I was with my battalion in the trenches at Willebroeck, the first line of the fortifications of Antwerp, about the 25th of September. The 35th Regiment of the line (I tore off the epaulettes of one of the officers who was killed and I saw the number of the regiment) advanced against us over some flat land, in line, about a yard separating each man, crawling on hands and knees. The Germans seemed to have started from a wood on the right, and I saw distinctly from a distance of 200 yards that there were some women and children in front of the first line. I noticed particularly in all four children, one woman and one old man in civilian middle-class dress. They were walking upright, each of them in front of a German soldier, and between the Germans and us. It was in the afternoon, and I saw some officers of the German regiment, and they could not help seeing the women and children. For instance, one officer fell dead quite close to where one of the children was. During the advance I saw that the woman refused to advance. She turned round, and showed her back to us, and I saw the German who was creeping behind her give her two thrusts with the bayonet upwards towards the breast. At the second thrust she fell. We could hear her cries; we did not fire upon either the woman or the children, but we kept our fire upon the soldiers who were not covered by them. One of the children, who seemed about four or five years of age, ran towards the woman when she fell, and the soldier behind him shot him, placing the muzzle of his rifle upon the child's temple, and half the head was blown away before my eyes. Our regiment left the trenches and attacked with the bayonet and drove the Germans back. Their losses were very heavy.

BRITISH SOLDIER (G 11), MONS

I was serving with my battalion at Mons. On the 24th of August we were retiring from the direction of Mons. We were marching along a road in close formation. We were under fire from the enemy's batteries in a wood on our front and between us and Mons. About 700 or 800 yards to our left front I noticed a party of Germans about 600 strong. They were not entrenched, neither did I see them retiring or advancing. They were in an open position and were under a heavy shell fire from our batteries, which kept up an incessant fire the whole time. About 300 yards behind and to the right of the Germans was a small village. I saw a large number of civilians, men, women, and children, standing in front of the Germans. It was about 11 o'clock a.m. I saw some men, women, and children actually brought into the front of the German position from the village. They were being pushed along by Germans. One old man was very old and bent. I noticed two women in particular who had

two or possibly three children, and they were holding them close in as if to shield them. One of the women had a blue apron on. Altogether I suppose there were 16 to 20 women there, about a dozen children, and half-a-dozen men.

FIFTEEN OUT OF SEVENTY-TWO.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (G 35), HOOGLEDE.

At Hooglede there were some French troops hiding behind the church and they again opened fire on the Germans but did not kill any of them. We were then taken back by the way we had come until we got to a place called Ondank. From Ondank we proceeded to Staden. At Staden the French troops again fired on us; they killed the five German Uhlans who were in front, and one of the Belgian prisoners was also killed. When this happened the Germans got angry, and they then put all the prisoners, including myself, in front of them. The French went on firing, and 15 of the prisoners were hit. When we saw our companions fall we waved a white handkerchief and shouted "Vive la Belgique." The French then stopped firing at us. The remaining prisoners tried to run away; some of them succeeded in escaping and some were shot down by the Germans. I couldn't get away myself. Eventually there were only 15 of us left out of the whole 72. I was one of the 15

BRITISH SOLDIER (G 36), AISNE.

After we left the Aisne we were billeted in a village near Ypres (I am not sure of the name). We got the alarm, and as we were advancing on one another, the Germans came on in irregular formation, with a quantity of women and children and also old men in civilian dress. We had been warned of the possibility of this, and we had orders to fire notwithstanding, and I myself had to fire upon civilians in this case. After the Germans had been driven back, some of these women who had not been shot showed us their backs. I saw myself the blood on their backs where they had been pricked by bayonets, and in one case a woman had anything from 20 to 50 bayonet marks on her back. This was about October 20th.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (D 135), SCHEPFLAER.

The girls were being outraged by German soldiers on the roadside as we came up. I knew this because immediately we surprised the Germans I saw girls run away from among the German soldiers towards Malines, passing through our lines, and as they passed they told me what had happened. I saw blood on their skirts and legs for they wore short skirts, being apparently from 14 to 16 years of age, and their blouses were torn, exposing the bosom. The outrages must have been witnessed by men of the village who were held prisoners by the German soldiers, and were standing among the Germans, who used them as shields, firing from behind them, the villagers being themselves unarmed.

BRITISH SOLDIER (G 12), MONS.

August 24th I was with my section at Frameries in a side street behind a barricade. I saw about 30 women, partially dressed, some with babies in their arms. They were crying. A large body of Germans were just behind them. The women formed a screen. The women had the appearance of having been hastily collected. I say so because they were only partially dressed and carried nothing as refugees always did

BELGIAN SOLDIER (G 21), MALINES.

About the 2nd of September my regiment was retiring before the Germans upon Malines. We had heard from an air scout that the Germans were advancing with children in front of them. At about 7 p.m. we were about 300 metres from Malines, and I saw a regiment of German infantry advancing along the road. There were about



MORE VICTIMS OF MASSACRES AT ANDENNE.



10 children in front of them. They were about 500 metres from me. The children were roped together in two rows, with a German each side of the row. They appeared to be from 7 to 9 years of age and reached up to the height of the Germans' chests. The Germans were firing upon us as they advanced in this way.

## STATEMENTS BEFORE THE BELGIAN COMMISSION.

### FROM THE BEGINNING OF HOSTILITIES.

These statements are taken from the official report of the Belgian Commission.

From the first moment when the German army came into touch with the Belgian forces before Liège, it sought to protect itself by thrusting before it groups of civilians. One witness described to us the way in which a German battery, which was firing at the Carmelite Monastery of Chevremont, sought to shelter itself from the fire of a fort by massing around itself people arrested from the neighbouring villages, including women and even children. The same witness declares that he saw a body of German troops, who passed through the gap between forts Fléron and Chaudfontaine, driving before them many civilians, whom they had picked up on the highway; most of them had their hands tied behind their backs. Another group was made to march in the middle of the column; it included an old man of eighty years of age, whom two companions had literally to drag along.

### SPECIFIC INSTANCES.

(a) The soldiers Goffin, Heyvaerts and Hertleer depose that, having been made prisoners on 6th August, along with other men of their company, they were taken on by the Germans with their hands bound behind their backs. At Saive they came in contact with a company of the Belgian 19th of the Line. The Germans placed them in front, and at a certain moment ordered them to cry, "Belgians, do not fire; you are shooting at Belgians!" Two of the prisoners fell, shot down by the balls of their comrades. [Evidence taken at the Session of 19th September.]

(b) On Tuesday, 18th August, Joseph Hymen, of Schaeffen, and two inhabitants of Meldert were forced to go in front of the German troops through the town of Diest and then to guide them to Montaigu. [Evidence taken at the Session of 3rd September.]

### A GERMAN BRIDGE-HEAD.

(f) At the bridge of Lives, opposite Biez, the Germans placed women and children at the head of their attacking column. Both women and children were brought down by the Belgian fire.

(g) At very many places in Hainault the Germans made civilians, women, and children march in front of their columns. For example, at Marchienne a German column drove in front of it a crowd of several hundred civilians. It was marching on Montigny-le-Tilleul, where the first serious collision with French troops took place. [Evidence taken at the Session of 30th September.]

(i) On 24th August Michael de Vleeshchower, his brother Joseph, and their father, 67 years of age, all of Grimbergen, were driven along in front of a party of Germans to shelter them from Belgian artillery fire, [Session of 1st September.]

(l) On 25th August the Germans constrained about 200 people of the village of Hofstaede, men, women, and children, to march in front of them. Arriving at the high road of Terveuren they came on Belgian troops at a distance of 150 or 200 yards. The Germans fired from behind the prisoners. The Belgians opened fire from the flanks only,

to avoid hitting their people. [Deposition taken at Ostend, 23rd September.]

(p) On 12th September, at Erpe, a German column of from 200 to 300 men was attacked by a Belgian armed motor-car. The Germans seized in the houses of the village some 20 or 25 men and lads, including one boy only 13 years old, and placed them across the high road. Two lads were wounded in the thigh by a bullet. The occupants of the armed motor, seeing that civilians had been placed in front of them, ceased their fire. One witness adds that at one moment he heard an order given that all the prisoners were to be shot if the Belgians continued their fire. [Session of 5th September.]

(q) On Saturday, 26th September, at the combat of Alost, the Germans forced several inhabitants of Alost to march in front of them while they were attacking the Belgian troops. The names of those persons were Franz Meulebroek, Cornelis van Hat, Emile van der Meersch, Gustave Drosat, and his brother Alphonse, Louis Ongena, and François Buyd. The Belgian soldiers shouted to them to throw themselves flat. Franz Meulemans was struck by a German bullet. The enemy having been repulsed, these civilians were able to escape. [Session of 12th October.]

### ON THE BRIDGE OF THE SAMBRE.

To turn to the other side of Belgium, a witness gives us the following description of a German column as it marched through a commune of the Borinage (province of Hainault) on its way to attack the French, who were falling back to the other bank of the Sambre. "There came first cyclists, then infantry in open order, then a party of about 100 'hostages' then masses of infantry, next some motors (of which several were being dragged by horses) then some guns, and, lastly, a group of about 300 more 'hostages,' who had ropes passed round them. Although the French had lined the heights which commanded the valley, they hesitated long before firing. The reason was that they saw these civilians both at the head of and behind the German column. After the fighting had begun, and many Germans had fallen under the French fire, the troops occupying the village of — set fire to all the houses along the street where they were standing." This did not hinder the onward march of the invading army. At 10 p.m. the witness observed another group of civilians, which comprised this time many women and children. Part of them, men, women and children, were forced to spend the night on the bridge over the Sambre, in order that the French might be prevented from bombarding it. Others were pushed forward toward the French firing-line; among these were the priest in charge of the Free School, an old man of 64, and three younger ecclesiastics. On the following morning our witness, who was under arrest himself in another group of "hostages," noticed eight nuns stationed on the bridge, to preserve it against attempts at destruction.

At Tamines a witness, who was looking on from a window, saw the combat between French and German troops along the line of the Sambre; he noticed that the Germans thrust some civilians before them across the bridge. When these unfortunate people tried to save themselves by slipping into the first houses beyond the bridge, the Germans fired on them, and several ran mortally wounded into the very house in which the witness was standing, and died there.

### THE SCREEN AT TERMONDE.

When Termonde was reoccupied by the Belgians new atrocities took place. During the fighting some German soldiers, under an officer, compelled 15 civilians to march in front of them on the road to St. Gilles; of this party three were ladies and two young girls! At St. Gilles, a man, who had received five bayonet thrusts in the abdomen, was tied up (as if crucified) to a door—his right hand bound to the door-handle, his left to the bell-pull.

Camille de Rijken, a stoker of Termonde, was bayoneted in the presence of his wife.

## A GERMAN ADMISSION.

Letter written by Lieut. A. Eberlein, a Bavarian officer, and published on the 7th October, 1914, in the "Vorabendblatt" of the "Münchener Neueste Nachrichten."

October 7, 1914.

But we arrested three other civilians, and then I had a brilliant idea. We gave them chairs, and we then ordered them to go and sit out in the middle of the street. On their part, pitiful entreaties; on ours, a few blows from the butt end of the rifle. Little by little one becomes terribly callous at this business. At last they were all seated outside in the street. I do not know what anguished prayers they may have said, but I noticed that their hands were convulsively clasped the whole time. I pitied these fellows, but the method was immediately effective.

The flank fire from the houses quickly diminished, so that we were able to occupy the opposite house and thus to dominate the principal street. Every living being who showed himself in the street was shot. The artillery on its side had done good work all this time, and when, towards seven o'clock in the evening, the brigade advanced to the assault to relieve us I was in a position to report that Saint-Dié had been cleared of the enemy.

Later on I learned that the regiment of reserve which entered Saint-Dié further to the north had tried the same experiment. The four civilians whom they had compelled, in the same way, to sit out in the street were killed by French bullets. I myself saw them lying in the middle of the street near the hospital.

(Signed) A. EBERLEIN,  
First Lieutenant.

## IX.—A FIRST SUMMARY OF THE MURDERS IN BELGIUM.

It will not be possible till the end of the war to find the whole sum in loss of life and property which the Belgians suffered at the hands of the German soldiery; but a detailed account has been made out for some Provinces and appears in the Official Reports of the Belgian Government. Thus, in Brabant 897 persons were killed, 2,110 taken as prisoners to Germany, 5,821 houses burnt.

Some details as to Luxembourg are as follows:—

In a great number of Luxembourg villages the German troops gave themselves up to veritable executions *en masse*. The number of men shot in the whole Province is over 1,000.\* The following figures relate to certain villages only:—

Neufchâteau ..	18 shot
Vance .....	1 shot.
Etalle .....	30 shot.
Houdemont ....	11 shot.
Tintigny .....	157 shot.
Izele .....	10 shot.
Rossignol .....	106 shot.
Bertrix .....	21 shot.
Ethe .....	About 300 persons shot—530 in all missing.
Bellefontaine ..	1 man shot.
Latour .....	Only 17 men surviving in the village.
St. Leger .....	11 shot.
Maissin .....	10 men, 1 woman, and 1 young girl shot; 2 men and 2 women wounded.
Villance .....	2 men shot; 1 young girl wounded.
Anloy .....	52 men and women shot.
Claireuse .....	2 men shot; 2 men hung.

About 111 persons of the Communes of Ethe and Rossignol were publicly shot at Arlon. Some days later eight persons from neighbouring Communes were executed there. A police officer at Arlon named Lempereur was shot without trial, on a trifling accusation which was afterwards discovered to be unfounded.

\* The Province of Luxembourg, the most thinly peopled district in the kingdom, has only in all 232,500 inhabitants.

### INCENDIARISM IN LUXEMBOURG.

The northern parts of the Province have been generally respected. On the other hand, two regions in the South of the Province have been completely devastated. The first of these regions includes the villages of Porcheresse, Maissan, Anloy, Villance, Framont, Ôchamp, Jehonville, Offagne, Blancheoreille, Assenois, and Glaumont. The other region includes all the Communes in the triangle between a line drawn from Florenville to Virton, from Virton to Habay, and from Habay to Florenville.

We have drawn up rough statistics of the houses burnt in each of these different localities, viz.:—

Neufchâteau ..	21 houses burnt.
Etalle .....	30 houses burnt
Houdemont ....	64 houses burnt.
Rulles .....	Half the houses destroyed by fire.
Ansart .....	Village completely burnt.
Tintigny .....	Only 3 houses still standing.
Jamoigne .....	Half the village destroyed.
Les Bulles.....	Half the village destroyed.
Meyen .....	42 houses destroyed.
Rossignol .....	Village entirely burnt.
Mussy la Ville ..	20 houses burnt.
Bertrix .....	15 houses destroyed.
Bleid .....	Great part of village destroyed.
Signeux .....	Great part of village destroyed.
Ethe .....	Five-sixths of the village burnt.
Bellefontaine ..	6 houses burnt.
Musson .....	Half the village destroyed.
Baranzey .....	Only 4 houses remaining.
St. Leger .....	6 houses burnt.
Semel .....	Every house burnt.
Maissin .....	64 out of 100 houses burnt.
Villance .....	9 houses burnt.
Anloy .....	26 houses burnt.

These figures are low estimates. Over 3,000 houses were probably burnt by wilful and systematic incendiarism in Luxembourg.

In the Province of Liège 3,555 houses were burnt; Antwerp, 3,588; Namur, 5,243.

In the Arrondissement of Dinant 2,232 houses were burnt, and 606 killed have been identified by name, age, and occupation. The ages range from a three weeks' baby to an old woman of 77.

## X.—KILLING OR MUTILATING THE WOUNDED.

**I**NSTANCES in which the Germans killed, mutilated, or foully treated the wounded come from every front on which actions have been fought. First we place the testimony of witnesses collected by the Bryce Commission. It is followed by evidence collected by France and by Belgium. German admissions confirm this evidence. Lastly comes the evidence from the Russian front. Evidence taken in the Balkans occupies a place by itself in later pages.

### BELGIAN SOLDIER (H 6).

At about midnight a patrol, consisting of three soldiers and an officer, made their round. It was a moonlight night. They came to where I was lying, and pulled me up by my hair. I kept my eyes shut and made no sound. They then dropped me and struck me on the lower part of my back with the butt end of the rifle, but the blow did not hurt me very much, on account of my wearing my belt at the time; nevertheless, I was laid up for a fortnight, and was seen by the doctors at Ghent and Brussels. Near me were several other wounded Belgian soldiers, and I heard some of them crying with pain. They had been wounded by rifle shots, but not very seriously. One man lying near me had a bullet wound in his left shoulder. Another man had a bullet wound in his chin. The German soldiers went up to these two and to the other wounded men and struck them several times with the butt ends of their rifles, and killed about 10 of them. I could see this by the light of the moon and could hear the blows. I do not know the names of any of these men, because they belonged to a different company. I am of opinion that some of them would have recovered from their bullet wounds if they had received proper treatment. I was afterwards in the hospital with others who had been more dangerously wounded, but who recovered.

### BRITISH SOLDIER (H 8).

As we were about to cross a bridge over a river—a permanent bridge, not one made by the troops—a party of German cavalry and infantry who were hidden in the trees and bushes round about came out and cut us off. They marched us off to a big house which was on the same side of the river about 4 or 5 miles away. They kept all of us there for about 11 days. There were about 20 Belgian and French prisoners in the same house. We were all together. After we had been there about 9 days they parted the French and Belgian soldiers from us and took them all outside the house away from us. I saw the Germans tie some of these soldiers to trees. I was looking out of a little window, but I could see what went on clearly and distinctly. The trees were not more than 60 or 70 yards away and it was about four or five in the afternoon. I saw five men tied to trees. The Germans were all mad drunk with the stuff they had looted. They started sticking their knives in the faces and necks of the men, and I heard the men crying out. They also pricked them with their bayonets. It seemed to me to last a long time, but I do not think now they tortured them for more than a few minutes, and then they shot them all.

### BRITISH SOLDIER (H 9).

On Wednesday, 26th August, I was with my regiment at Courtrai. I was wounded at Mons on the 23rd, and had to march to St. Quentin; there I was picked up by a field

ambulance. We were retiring from our trenches on the Wednesday, and had to leave our wounded behind who could not march. The Germans were advancing rapidly in large numbers, it was 3.30, broad daylight. An officer called to us to come and form up to take a position further back. He was a staff officer. He was between us and the Germans. Our only remaining officer was retiring with us. The Germans were turning the wounded over with their feet and pinning them to the floor with their bayonets. I saw several treated in this way. I should think about a dozen.

### BRITISH SOLDIER (H 16).

We lay there till about 2.30 p.m., when the firing in that portion of the line practically stopped. The Germans on the ridge just above us then got up and, coming forward, caught sight of us; we were all lying down flat on the ground; there were ten or a dozen of them, all privates of the 48th Reserve Regiment. I was lying on my face, and heard them make a sort of growling noise when they saw us. They put their rifles up immediately, and the captain held up his hand and said, "Please, don't, don't." Two or three of them took no notice and several shots were fired; the captain was hit in the chin by a bullet which went through his head and killed him, and had another shot through the stomach. Private F. was killed by a shot through the stomach; I and the lance-corporal were not touched. Those who had fired were opening their rifles to eject the empty cartridges, and looked as if they were going to shoot again, when one stepped forward and said what sounded like "No, no, no," and pushed their rifles aside; the lance-corporal and I were then taken prisoners.

### BRITISH SOLDIER (H 23).

The distance between the trenches of the opposing forces was about 400 yards. I should say about 50 or 60 of our men had been left lying on the field. From our trenches, after we had got back to them, I distinctly saw German soldiers come out of their trenches and go over to spots where our men were lying and bayonet them. I could not say how many German soldiers did this, but I should say there were quite a dozen. Some of our men were lying nearly halfway between the trenches. The nearest that I saw any German soldier come and bayonet any of our men was about halfway between the trenches. One could see quite clearly. It was still daylight.

After two or three subsequent engagements at the same place, fought from the same trenches, I again saw the Germans do the same thing, that is, bayoneting our wounded.

### BRITISH SOLDIER, N.C.O. (H 18).

On September 14th last my company was engaged with the enemy in the valley of the river Aisne. Early in the morning, at about 8 or 9 o'clock, I was wounded in the left knee and took shelter in a chalk pit. During the day 12 other men came in, all of whom were wounded. Of these two were officers, one being Lieut. G. of my own regiment, and the other, I believe, was a subaltern in one of the regiments of Guards. These two officers each had a pistol, but none of the other wounded men in the pit had arms of any sort. . . . The British force fell back, and by 4 or 5 o'clock in the afternoon three of the wounded men had died and others appeared to be bleeding to death. Therefore when we heard the approach of the



*Photo: Topical.*

**CATHEDRAL OF ST. MARTIN, YPRES.**

The interior, looking down the Cathedral. The choir is unroofed and the picture of St. Martin over the altar is seen exposed in the background. The Cathedral was built in the thirteenth century on the site of an earlier edifice founded in 1073. The choir dated from 1221, and there was a magnificent rose-window. A vast heap of bricks, stone, and powdery dirt now represents half the building.

Germans we decided to attract their attention in order that we might get medical assistance. One of the officers happened to have a white handkerchief, and this the officer, whom I believe to have belonged to the Guards, marked with a cross in blood and tied to a folding combination stick-seat. The same officer then held up this flag, and in this way attracted the attention of a party of about eight Germans. . . . At this time the wounded in the chalk pit were not grouped together, but were scattered about the pit lying or sitting in the position which gave each one most ease. With the exception of the officer holding up the flag, none of us had anything in his hands. The Germans came up to the edge of the pit; it was getting dusk, but the light was still good and everything clearly discernible. One of the Germans, who appeared to be carrying no arms and who at any rate had no rifle, came a few feet down the slope into the chalk pit. He came to within 8 or 10 yards of some of the wounded men. He looked at the men, laughed, and said something in German to the Germans who were waiting on the edge of the pit.

Immediately one of them fired at the Guards officer; then three or four of us were shot; then Lieut. G.; then myself and the rest of us. I was shot in the right shoulder. After an interval of some time I sat up, and found that I was the only man of the ten who were living when the Germans came into the pit remaining alive, and that all the rest were dead. Later a soldier named D., of my company, came to the pit, and I at once told him what had happened. He bound up my shoulder, and early in the morning of September 15th I managed to get to a picket of the Welsh Border Regiment

#### BELGIAN VOLUNTEER (H 5).

On or about the 9th August, I am not certain of the dates, I was at Haelen, where there had been a cavalry engagement on that date from 8 a.m. to 1 o'clock midday. The Belgians were the 3rd and 4th Lancers, the 1st regiment of "Chasseurs à cheval"; and the Germans were the Uhlans and the Dragoons. I do not know the numbers of these two regiments. The Germans retreated as the Belgians were reinforced by Field Artillery and Carabiniers. I then went on the battlefield, and saw a lieutenant of the 3rd Belgian Lancers holding his nose. I said, "What is the matter?" He said, "Look," taking off his handkerchief, and I saw that the lower part of his nose had been cut from above, as part of his lower lip had also been cut at the same time. It was quite fresh cut, and bleeding very much. I said, in French, "How did it happen?" He said, "The Germans threw me down when I was on foot, held me, and while two were holding me down a third cut my nose off with his pocket knife, and kicked me on my thigh, saying, 'Marsch' (meaning 'Get away')."

#### BELGIAN DOCTOR (H 1).

On 4th August, at about 11 a.m., a Belgian soldier of the 9th Regiment of the Line was brought in who had received a bullet wound in the chest and other wounds. His nose was cut completely off. He stated that he had been shot in action some few hours previously, and was taken into a house, and after being there some hours German soldiers entered the house, and one of them took hold of his nose with one hand and with the other cut his nose off; the other soldiers then treated him in a brutal manner, and subsequently left him there

#### BRITISH SOLDIER (H 27).

On October 24th, the day Colonel L. . . . was killed, I was in a bayonet charge in a wood off Zouarabeeke; we were 150-200 strong. Lieut. O. . . . was in charge of 16 platoon. I had been cut off from my company and found myself with No. 16. After the charge I and about a dozen other men, including my chum, who was killed in November, were searching the German wounded for firearms and ammunition; the other dozen

men searching were Oxford Light Infantry and Worcesters. I did not know any of them. I saw English and German wounded lying intermixed, the result of a previous charge, as this whole affair had lasted about one-and-a-half hours. We were the reinforcements. Twelve to 15 of the English wounded were lying dead with their throats cut; they had been bandaged up and attended to by their comrades, showing that they had been wounded and then killed after they had received first aid. I cannot say for certain whether the Germans came again temporarily over the ground. I saw myself five prisoners, including an officer unwounded, who had been shamming dead in the woods, not in this spot—the wood stretched for miles. I could not say when or how exactly the men had had their throats cut, but I am quite certain I saw them in the condition I have described.

### FRENCH OFFICIAL REPORTS.

These reports of the killing of prisoners and wounded by the Germans are from French Official sources

#### "FINISHING THEM OFF."

M. Joseph Houillon, 69 years of age, cultivating the farm of La Petite Rochelle at Benviler (Meurthe and Moselle), declares as follows:

"On the 22nd August, 1914, at about two o'clock in the afternoon, nine wounded men came to my house, amongst them a quartermaster of the 81st Regiment. I made them lie down in my barn while waiting for help, but about twenty minutes later there came a company of German infantry. Its captain, seeing these French soldiers, gave the order to four of his men to finish them off by shooting them in the ear. This order was forthwith carried out. These poor wounded men were put to death, and their bodies were left in my barn

"On the 26th August an armed body of Germans commanded by an officer came and proceeded to bury their victims, after having taken from them their medals and such money as they possessed. I noticed that the quartermaster, whose name I do not know, had a little canvas bag attached to the right side of the belt of his trousers or drawers, which contained one 100-franc note and three 5-franc pieces. As regards the appearance of this soldier, I remember that he was of medium height and that his hair was brown, that is all I can tell you about him.

"After the burial a German soldier told me that the medals and the money thus taken would be restored after the war to the families of these soldiers, whose names and regimental numbers had been duly noted."

(Police Report.)

#### "WE DO NOT WANT ANY PRISONERS."

Madame Wogt (Léa), born at Aubry, 22 years of age, worker in the factory known as "Les Tiges" at Saint-Dié (Vosges), states:

"On Saturday, 29th August, 1914, between 10 and 11 o'clock in the morning, at the time when an engagement was taking place in the neighbourhood between the German and French troops, I had taken refuge with my father-in-law in the cellar of the house in which I reside

"Thirty soldiers of the 99th Regiment of Infantry came to take shelter in this cellar. They were discovered there by German soldiers. Seeing the Germans, the French soldiers laid down their arms and gave themselves up as prisoners. My father-in-law, who speaks German, conveyed to the Germans what the French soldiers were saying, but one of them replied in German, 'We do not want any prisoners.' They made the French soldiers come out of the cellar, and then compelled them to go down on their knees in the garden which adjoins the house; later they led them to the front of the house, and placed them up against it, a yard's distance from the wall, facing towards the road, and there they shot



*Photo Topical.*

**A STREET IN SERMAIZE.**

All that remains of a principal street in Sermaize-les-Bains. The property all round has been completely levelled. Nothing remains of the buildings but a mass of crumbled brickwork at the sides of the road. Another view of Sermaize is given on page 60.

them. I did not witness the last part of this scene, for I was utterly overcome; I only heard from the cellar the noise of the firing and the last anguished cries of the French soldiers. A few moments afterwards I came out, and there I saw, stretched side by side and lifeless, the thirty Frenchmen. Before being shot one of the soldiers wished to give me the address of his wife, but he was not able to do so, for he was roughly dragged away by his executioners. Before leaving the house the Germans destroyed all the French arms which they found there."

#### ROBBERY FIRST, MURDER AFTERWARDS.

At the Grand Lycée of Marseilles a private of the 1st Class, Félix Herbet, belonging to the 106th Regiment of Infantry, 5th Company, Class of 1913, pastrycook by profession, made the following statement:—

"On the 10th September last,\* towards five o'clock in the morning, during a night attack at Lavoux-Marie, near to Rambercourt-aux-Pots (Meuse), the Germans turned the right of the slope which we were defending and opened fire upon us. I was struck in the right side by a bullet which pierced the intestine (confirmed by an assistant-surgeon attached to the Auxiliary Hospital, No. 26, at Bar-le-Duc); I fell, and begged one of my comrades to remove my knapsack, which he did at once. At that moment my company was obliged to retreat, and I remained on the spot with three comrades who had also been seriously wounded. The Germans took possession of the slope, and then left it to continue the pursuit, detaching a few of their men to hold the position. These men proceeded to search our knapsacks, and especially mine; they took my box of preserves, and from the right-hand pocket of my trousers they took also a packet of tobacco and my watch and chain.

"All of a sudden, and quite unexpectedly, I received a violent blow on the head from the butt of a rifle, then a second and a third. I lost a great deal of blood, but made no sound and feigned death. One of them fired at me, either with a gun or with a revolver; I cannot say which it was, for I was no longer capable of seeing anything clearly. This shot only grazed my right arm, scorching it badly. I then heard them say, 'Kaput! Kaput!' and they left me there. Close by me my three comrades were in their death agony; they had also been shot point-blank with rifles.

"I remained there for about half-an-hour, and then I dragged myself as best I could to a distance of about 100 yards from the spot where I had been wounded. At this moment I saw a wounded Frenchman leaving the slope. Hardly had he gone 100 yards when he was stopped by a German officer, who killed him by shooting him in the head with a revolver. I was utterly terrified by what I had seen, and I owe the preservation of my life to the fact that for the rest of the day I remained lying in the mud pretending to be dead. All this time the Germans were passing quite close to me, and I dared not move. I had to pass the whole night in this position, and on the following morning I was able to drag myself as far as the 54 Regiment of French Infantry, near Marat-la-Petite"

#### MASSACRE OF WOUNDED PRISONERS.

Report by Colonel Chiche, commanding the 134th Reserve Brigade, concerning the massacre of over fifty French prisoners near the trench at Calonne:

Vaux-les-Palameix, September 23, 1914.

On the 22nd September, 1914, at about 3.45 p.m., as the result of the vigorous counter-attack led by the colonel commanding the 134th Brigade, by Major Yehl and Capt. Lauth, the 288th Regiment regained possession of the trench at Calonne.

On arrival at the crossways formed by this trench and the road which leads from Vaux to Saint-Rémy a stretcher-bearer corporal of the 288th drew the attention of the colonel to the peculiar appearance of some fifteen dead and wounded Frenchmen who were lying in the wood. Of

these men one non-commissioned officer was still alive. He gave a very moving account of their terrible experiences. Surrounded in the wood, and most of them wounded, they had been taken prisoners by the Germans, then advancing. When the Germans were compelled to retire they made these prisoners lie down, and shot them on the ground, without formalities of any kind and with savage brutality. In certain cases the heads of the victims were literally reduced to pulp.

#### A SHAMBLES.

Burning with indignation at the perpetration of such atrocities, the colonel was proceeding towards the road when he was informed that acts of the same kind had been committed in that part of the wood which lies to the north of the trench at Calonne. There a regular shambles was found, some forty French soldiers of the 54th, 67th, and 259th Regiments lying on the ground with their heads shattered.

Three soldiers who have survived these atrocities were afterwards in the hospital of the 288th Regiment at Vaux-les-Palameix, namely, Privates Tantot and Grandjean, of the 1st Company of the 54th, and Private Chevalier of the 20th Company of the 261st.

#### TO SAVE TIME.

Report by Capt. Eydoux, commanding the 1st Battalion of the 67th Regiment of Infantry, concerning the same crime:

On the 22nd September the 1st Battalion of the 67th occupied a supporting position at the crossways formed by the road from Mouilly to Saint-Rémy and the main trench of Calonne. At about 2 p.m. the 3rd Company was sent forward to support the 1st Battalion of the 54th, at the eastern edge of the wood of Saint-Rémy. About half-an-hour later, the 54th having withdrawn, without this being known to the lieutenant in command of the 3rd Company, a section of that company was cut off by a German company and some thirty men were taken prisoners.

Compelled to beat a retreat, the Germans took their prisoners with them, but shortly afterwards they made them lie down, and having withdrawn to a distance of a few yards, fired upon them, killing and wounding a great number.

These facts are certified by Privates Louvain, Cotté, and Debèze, who succeeded in making good their escape.

#### FIFTY PRISONERS MURDERED.

Official Report of a statement made by Private Charton, *in extremis*, having reference to the massacre of fifty or sixty French prisoners in the vicinity of Mouilly (Meuse)

Verdun, October 2, 1914.

Albert Charton, a native of Paris, private in the 254th Regiment of Infantry, admitted to the temporary hospital No. 8 at Verdun on the 24th September, has made the following statement in the presence of Corp. Collin, of the Medical Staff, of Hospital Attendant Batancourt, and of Instructor Rousseaux:

"On the 22nd or 23rd September some fifty or sixty soldiers of the 254th Infantry were made prisoners by the Germans in the neighbourhood of Mouilly (Meuse). Amongst these men was an adjutant.

"After having disarmed them, a German captain drew his revolver and blew out the brains of the adjutant. This was the signal for a general massacre. The soldiers, under this captain's orders, proceeded immediately to shoot the Frenchmen point-blank. Not a single one was spared."

Charton, like all his comrades, was dreadfully wounded; an explosive bullet carried away the flesh of his left arm, the second bullet produced a complicated fracture of the left thigh, and a third made a large open wound in the soft part of the left calf. (Extract from the records of temporary hospital No. 8, dated the 24th September, 1914.)

Thus grievously wounded, Charton fell and lost consciousness, to which fact he owed his safety for the time

\* 1914.



[Photo: Typical.]

**SERMAIZE LES BAINS.**

All that remains of the Grand Place of the little town in the Marne Department. Most of these small towns through which the German passed have had whole streets obliterated, fire often being employed as a systematic means of devastation and terrorism.



being. Left for dead, he was not finished off by the Germans. He was picked up on the following day, or perhaps a day later, entered the temporary hospital No. 8 on the 24th September, and died there on the 28th.

Recorded at Verdun on the 2nd October, 1914, and declared to be true and trustworthy by the above-mentioned witnesses.

(Signed) BATANCOURT. COLLIN. ROUSSEAUX.

Report by Sergt. Maginot, of the 6th Company of the 44th Territorial Regiment, to the Lieut.-Colonel in command of the said regiment, on the finding of the mutilated body of a French soldier at Ornes (Meuse):

#### TORTURED AND KILLED.

On the 21st October, 1914, I left Bezonvaux village to carry out patrol duty in the direction of Ornes.

I had heard that a section of the 164th had fallen into an ambush, and had lost several men, one of whom, a sergeant, was said to be wounded. I came to Ornes half an hour after noon, and there amongst the orchards at the entrance to the village I found the body of a soldier of the 164th, named Ancel, who had disappeared that morning. By means of his regimental certificate, his badge, and certain papers found upon him we were able to establish his identity.

There were no bullet wounds on the body, but the skull was in a jelly and the brains strewn out on the ground. There was nothing left of the man's face, and one ear had been cut off. They had literally kicked the wretched man's head to pieces. By the side of his body we found his rifle, smashed in two in the way customary to the Germans, but there was no sign of blood on the butt of the weapon. There is no doubt whatever that Private Ancel was made to suffer most terrible cruelties. One must have seen the body to have any idea of the barbarities which the Germans can inflict on those of our men who fall into their hands.

At the time of the discovery of the body of Private Ancel the following men were present: Sergt. Maginot, Patrol Leader; Privates Poilblanc, Georges, Cochois, Bienaimé, Lericque, all of the 7th Company; Toussaint, Mahaut, Mancolin, Delabarre, Fondeur, and Robert.

#### LEFT ON THE FIELD.

Report by Capt. Louvard, of the Staff of the 3rd Group of Reserve Divisions to General P. Durand, commanding the 3rd Group, having reference to the killing of the wounded left on the field at Chauvencourt-Courouvre (Meuse):

Courouvre, September 29, 1914.

SIR,—I have the honour to inform you that on the 26th instant, being then with a portion of the staff at Rupt, before Saint-Mihiel, I was asked by the doctor of a field hospital of the 75th Division to take down the statements of several wounded soldiers who had seen the Germans finishing off the French wounded left upon the field after the attack on Chauvencourt.

At the field hospital I saw the following wounded men:

(1) Private Paul Chauvet, of the 258th of the line (Class of 1904, Avignon, No. 1086). Having been left wounded upon the field before Chauvencourt, after the withdrawal of the French troops, he saw three German soldiers going from one wounded man to another and finishing them off by firing at them point-blank.

(2) Private Louis Teissier, of the 258th of the line (Class of 1905, Avignon, No. 679), wounded in the same attack, witnessed the same spectacle.

(3) Private Albert Grousson, of the 258th of the line (Class of 1894, Antibes, No. 131), wounded in the attack upon the barracks at Chauvencourt, was left upon the field, and served as a target for several German soldiers, who only ceased firing at him when he fell prone upon the ground and pretended to be dead. At that time

there had not been any French troops in the vicinity for over an hour.

#### IN THE HOUR OF DEATH.

Statement by Sub-Lieutenant Bosveuil, of the 61st Regiment of Infantry, with reference to the killing of a Frenchman, wounded at Avocourt (Meuse):

I, the undersigned, Louis Bosveuil, Sub-Lieutenant of the Reserve in the 61st Regiment of Infantry, declare on my honour that I am prepared to testify to the truth of the following occurrence:

On the 23rd September, 1914, after the attack by the Germans on the village of Avocourt (Meuse), which attack was repulsed by a bayonet charge of certain troops of the 141st and 61st Regiments, I passed a line of killed and wounded—Frenchmen and Germans. As I passed I heard myself called by a wounded Frenchman of the 141st, who was lying on the ground, and who thus addressed me:

"Lieutenant, will you please undo my knapsack and lay my head comfortably? Those bandits have finished me, I am going to die. A bullet had struck me in the knee, and I was dragging myself along the ground, unarmed, when the Germans came upon me and riddled me with their bayonets. I have at least three wounds in the stomach, and as many more in the chest; an officer discharged his revolver at my head. I have a wife and child. Tell me at least that we are winning."

My reply in the affirmative brought comfort to this brave soldier in his hour of death, which seemed to me close at hand, but which I did not witness. Night was falling, and I had to gather my section together and bring in some prisoners.

Official Report of the dying statement of Private Godefroy, of the 39th Regiment:

September 19, 1915.

On the 19th September there was brought to our hospital, from the railway station at Rosny, a wounded man named Eugène Godefroy, of the 39th Infantry Regiment, a native of Rouen (Lower Seine), class of 1904, resident at Dieppe.

Examined on the spot, he was found to be suffering from an injury to the medulla, the result of a wound from a shell, with paralysis of the lower limbs. Œdema had set in in both his legs, which were covered with many large bruises and welts. His feet, in particular, were quite shapeless; the toes had been completely crushed, bursting the skin, and the whole presented the appearance of sanguinary pulp, coagulated into a purplish-black mass. His condition was declared to be desperate; he died at one o'clock in the afternoon of the 20th.

He had strength enough to talk, and he informed doctors Calonne and Maclaud, as well as the nurse who was attending him, that he had had his feet smashed with blows from the butt ends of rifles by German soldiers while lying wounded on the field of battle and unable to escape.

## BELGIAN OFFICIAL REPORTS.

### SOLDIERS HANGED, CLUBBED, AND SHOT.

To the preceding instances the following from the Belgian Official Report are to be added:

A cyclist-rifeman, who fell into the hands of the Germans in this same combat, was found hanged in a hedge. We have several witnesses to this fact, among them the priest of the village, who took charge of the burying of the corpse. (Evidence of Capt. Dezande, of the Cyclist Battalion.)

On 16th August French soldiers, wounded on the previous night at the battle of Dinant, were found with their skulls battered in by blows with clubbed rifles. (Evidence taken at the Session on 30th September, 1914.)

On 23rd August, at Namur, German soldiers moved



[Photo: Newspaper Illustrations Ltd.]

WRECK OF A PARIS HOUSE.

The wreckage of a small office and dwelling in the environs of Paris. It exemplifies the same idea of damage to private property, of which several instances are pictured in these pages.

their own wounded from the private hospital of Dr. Bribosia, which was used as a dressing station, but killed two Belgian and two French wounded men who had been tended there. They then set the hospital on fire. (Evidence at the Sessions of 29th August, 1914, 28th September, 1914, and 1st October, 1914.)

On 25th August, at Hofstaede, near Malines, a Belgian rifleman left slightly wounded was finished off with blows from the butts of rifles which smashed in his skull. (Evidence taken at Session of 27th August, 1914.)

#### EIGHTEEN PRISONERS BAYONETED.

Twenty-two soldiers of the same corps were found dead in a little wood lying to the right of the road from Malines to Terneuze, near Baarbeck. Eighteen of them had been killed by bayonet thrusts in the face; they had bullet wounds, but these were not dangerous, only sufficient to prevent them from escaping. But the four remaining Belgians, who had fatal bullet wounds, bore no traces of the bayonet. (Evidence taken at Session of 12th October, 1914.)

On 25th August, at the combat in the neighbourhood of Sempst, the soldier Lootens, of the 24th of the Line, who was charged to aid the ambulance staff in carrying off the wounded, found two Belgian corpses bound to a tree. These soldiers were still wearing their full equipment. Their coats were torn open, and it was clear that they had been bayoneted in the stomach; their entrails were protruding from the wounds. (Evidence taken at Session of 12th September, 1914.)

#### TORTURE OF PRISONERS.

On 11th September, 1914, Joseph Louis Burm, private in the 24th of the Line, deposed that he was captured by the Germans near Aerschot, and that his captors, to compel him to answer questions, plunged his hands into a saucepan of boiling water. The regimental surgeon of the corps, Thoné, bears witness that Burm's hands showed traces of having been scalded. This soldier states that two others of his comrades were also tortured. One of them, who had offered resistance, was seized and held by the arms and legs while his head was twisted round till death followed. The second had one of his fingers chopped off. (Evidence taken at Session of 21st September, 1914.)

Abbé Van Crombruggen makes, on 27th October, the following deposition:

"On 20th October, 1914, after the German attack on the bridge of Dixmude, at about 3 o'clock, I, the undersigned, along with the other witnesses whose names are appended to this paper, made the following discovery. The body of Sub-Lieut. Camille Poncin (of the 2nd Company, 3rd Battalion, 12th of the Line) was found in a posture indicating by every evidence that he had been executed by shooting. He had been put in bonds by means of a coil of iron wire, wound some ten times round his legs from the level of the ankles. This operation completed, the victim had been shot, whether in a standing or a kneeling position. His body, with the head thrown far backward, was lying on its back; the knees were soiled with mud, the heels were underneath the body. The unhappy officer must have sunk on his knees when falling backward, unless he was made to kneel before the volley was fired. In his breast were the marks of many bullets, very evident."

### GERMAN SOLDIERS' STATEMENTS ON KILLING THE WOUNDED.\*

"NO MORE PRISONERS TO BE TAKEN."

*General Stenger's Orders.*

The French Government from and after September, 1914, received from several channels information that

\* Use has been made, by kind permission of Mr. Heine-mann, of the translations of German documents which appear in Mr. J. O. P. Bland's "Germany's Violations of the Laws of War."

General Stenger, commanding the 58th Brigade (112th and 142nd Regiments of German Infantry), had given orders to his troops to kill their prisoners. His order had been communicated verbally by a number of officers belonging to various units of the brigade, and repeated in the ranks from man to man. For this reason it has reached us in several forms, all of which, however, agree as to their general sense. Two of the forms are as follows:

(a) "Von heute ab werden keine Gefangene mehr gemacht. Sämtliche Gefangene, verwundet oder unverwundet, sind niederzumachen."

(From and after to-day no more prisoners are to be taken. All prisoners, whether wounded or not, are to be killed.)

(b) "Von heute ab werden keine Gefangene mehr gemacht. Sämtliche Gefangene werden niedergemacht. Verwundete, ob mit Waffen oder wehrlos, niedergemacht. Gefangene auch in grösseren geschlossenen Formationen werden niedergemacht. Es bleibe kein Feind lebend hinter uns."

(From and after to-day no more prisoners are to be taken. All prisoners are to be massacred. The wounded, whether with or without arms, are to be killed off. Even when prisoners are in regularly constituted large units they are to be killed. No living enemy must be left behind us.)

In order to verify this information the French Government ordered an inquiry to be instituted in the various prisoners' camps. A certain number of soldiers belonging to the two regiments of the Stenger brigade were questioned, in accordance with the regular procedure of judicial inquiry, at the depots of Montbrison (Loire), Saint-Genest-Lerpt (Loire), Bonthéon (Loire), and La Roche-Arnaud (Haute-Loire), by M. Jules Picard, Commissary of Police; at the depot of Romans (Drôme) by M. Jean Ernest, local Justice of the Peace; at the depot of Saint-Rambert (Loire) by M. Jean-Dominique Poggi, local Justice of the Peace. The evidence, taken in each case upon oath, is all to the same effect. It shows that the order of General Stenger was conveyed to the troops at Thiaville (Meurthe-et-Moselle) and in the neighbourhood on the afternoon of 26th August, and that on the same day, at several places, French prisoners were killed and French wounded put to death.

#### GERMAN NOTEBOOKS IN EVIDENCE.

Anton Rothacher, 7th Company, 142nd Regiment Infantry, Stenger's Brigade:

"Brigadebefehl.

"Thursday, August 27, 1914.

"The regiment is reconstructed. A single battalion has been made out of the 1st and 2nd Battalions. I am appointed to the 8th Company. To-day again a number of men have rejoined who during the night had lost their way in the forest. Our Major, Mosebach, is wounded, but no one knows what has become of him. French prisoners and wounded are all shot, because they mutilate and ill-treat our wounded. Brigade Order."

Further, another soldier of the same brigade, the Reservist Reinhard Brenneisen, of the 4th Company of the 112th Regiment, at present a prisoner in England, wrote in his notebook:

"Auch kam Brigadebefehl, sämtliche Franzosen, ob verwundet oder nicht, die uns in die Hände fielen sollten erschossen werden, es dürften keine Gefangenen gemacht werden."

(A Brigade order arrived to shoot all Frenchmen who fall into our hands wounded or not. No prisoners to be made.)

#### A GERMAN AFFIDAVIT.

Sworn statement of Private A., 38th Reserve Regiment, now prisoner:

On the 23rd August Capt. Zeiche gave the order to shoot Frenchmen.

On the 9th September six French soldiers were taken prisoners, and eight more in the afternoon; that made fourteen men in all, and they also were shot, and there was



MURDER AND MUTILATION AT ANDENNE.

there a doctor who examined them, and when they had all been killed they were buried by the order of the officer commanding the company, and I, A., was there, too, when these men were shot.

On the 18th September some twenty-eight to thirty prisoners were taken, and they were guarded all night by the third section with fixed bayonets; my comrades and I gave the prisoners some biscuits, and they gave us some cigarettes, and they were led away by a non-commissioned officer towards the railway. I do not know whether they were led, but on the same day twenty more Frenchmen were taken, and then again eighteen. Lieut. Nehring gave us the order, as he did not know what to do with these prisoners, to shoot the last eighteen. This was done, and I, A., was there, and my first shot hit its man; the second missed its mark, because one of my comrades jostled me.

All the above has been written by me of my own free will. (Signed) A.

#### GERMAN ADMISSIONS.

I, the undersigned, B., belonging to the — Company of the 38th Regiment of the Reserve, swear before Almighty God that the following lines contain nothing but the truth. In the month of August (I do not remember the exact date) our company received orders to shoot all French prisoners without mercy. A few days afterwards, when six French prisoners had been brought in, Lieut. Kaps, our company commander, gave the order to two squads to place the prisoners, with their eyes bandaged, against trees and to shoot them, which order was immediately carried out. Lieut. Kaps himself gave the order to shoot; only one volley was fired, upon which the French prisoners immediately fell in a heap. A doctor who was present declared that they were dead. They were shot at a distance of about thirty yards. On a second occasion I heard my comrades speak of a similar execution of fourteen French prisoners by the — Company. On the last occasion, quite recently, I was told by a comrade that at the beginning of August he was ordered by an officer to shoot a badly wounded French soldier who was asking for water. Another of my comrades told me that he had shot a wounded Frenchman without orders. I have written these lines of my own free will, in all sincerity and after mature reflection; they contain nothing but the truth. I confirm them by my signature. (Signed) B.

#### OTHER NOTEBOOKS.

*Extract from the notebook of Sergeant-Major Bruchmann, of the 144th Regiment of Infantry, 16th Army Corps, recording the order to finish off wounded Turcos:*

Verwundeten Turkos soll kein Pardon gegeben werden. (No quarter to be given to wounded Turcos.)

*Extract from the notebook of the Reservist Fahlenstein, of the 34th Fusiliers, 2nd Army Corps, describing a massacre of wounded French soldiers, killed by order:*

They (the French) lay in heaps of eight or ten, wounded or dead, one on top of the other. Those who could still walk were made prisoners and carried off with us. Those who were severely wounded, shot through the head or lungs, &c., and could not get up, received another bullet, which put an end to them. These were the orders given to us.

*Extract from the notebook of Heinrich Frohlich, a non-commissioned officer of the 117th Regiment of Infantry, 3rd Hessians, 18th Army Corps, recording the order to give no quarter.*

Tuesday, September 8, 1914. Order to shoot down all French soldiers save the wounded, even if they wish to lay down their arms, because the French let us come very near, and then surprised us by violent firing.

#### NO ENGLISH PRISONERS WANTED.

*Extract from the notebook of Gottsche, a non-commissioned officer of the 85th Regiment of Infantry, 9th Army Corps, recording the order to make no English prisoners.*

October 6, 1914. We wanted to take the fort at once, but we had first to camp at Kessel, to the east of Antwerp. The captain called us round him and said: "In the fort we are going to take there will very probably be English soldiers. But I don't wish to see any English prisoners with my company." A general bravo! of approval was the answer.

*Extract from the diary of a private of the Reserve, Joh. Nusser, belonging to the 3rd Bavarian Regiment, Reserve.*

October 5. At evening, start out on the road towards Arras. This evening two squads of the third section shot fourteen Turcos according to martial law.

*Fragment of a letter found on September 20, 1914, at F'Ecouvillon, in a German trench, recording the massacre of prisoners.*

"In the Field, 16th September, 1914.  
" . . . France will soon be at an end, for she has no more men. Every day we take so many, many prisoners. Now they are shot dead at once, for we have taken so many we don't know where to put them. Now I must end my letter. Hoping for a speedy reply, I remain,  
"Your truly loving, "G."

*Extract from the diary of Lieut. Lindau, of the 13th (Hohenzollern) Regiment of Artillery, recording the massacre of French prisoners by the order of a Bavarian colonel.*

August 21. We took our first prisoners in the village—two poor devils who seemed delighted to be captured. Before this, prisoners had been shot by order of a Bavarian colonel.

#### GERMAN PRIDE IN THEIR CRIMES.

It must not be supposed that the German people sees anything disgraceful in these atrocities. On the contrary, they are regarded as a proof of German prowess. Witness the following report of an engagement, written by Corp. Klemt, of the 154th Regiment, and confirmed by Lieut. von Niem, commanding his company, which was published in the *Jauer'sche Tageblatt* on the 18th October, 1914, and subsequently reproduced in the German work entitled *J'accuse*:

"A Day of Honour for our Regiment, September 24, 1914.

"We discovered the first Frenchmen. We brought them down from the trees like squirrels; on the ground they got a warm reception with butt ends and bayonets, and had no further need of a doctor. We are now fighting not with honourable foes but with treacherous brigands. With a leap we were over the glade. There they were in the hedges. On to them! *No quarter was given.* We shoot as we stand, only a few kneeling. No one thinks now of cover. We came to a hollow. Dead and wounded Frenchmen lay in masses around. The wounded were done to death with stabs or blows, for we know that the scoundrels fire at us in the back when we have gone by. There lay one full length with his face on the ground, feigning to be dead. The kick of a sturdy musketeer soon taught him that we were there. Turning round, he asks for quarter, but, with the words, 'Do you see, you —, that is how the thing works?' he is pinned to the earth. From close by came a strange cracking sound of butt-end blows, which a man of the 154th crashed down on a French bald head. He wisely used a French musket for the task in order not to destroy his own. Men with specially soft feelings give the *coup de grâce* to the wounded



TERRIBLE SAVAGERY AT ANDENNE.

Frenchmen with a bullet; others hack and stab for all they are worth. Bravely had our opponents fought; they were picked men whom we had before us. They let us approach to within 30-10 metres; then, to be sure, it was too late. They lie at the entrance to the screen of branches with wounds slight or severe, whining for quarter.

Our brave Musketeers save the Fatherland the heavy cost of feeding so many enemies.

"After the 'bloody work' the Germans lay down to sleep. The god of dreams paints for one and another a sweet picture. With a prayer of thankfulness on our lips we prepared by slumber for the coming day."

## XI.—RUSSIAN WOUNDED IN GERMAN HANDS.

### THE RUSSIAN OFFICIAL REPORT.

NOT ONE OF OUR WOUNDED MEN remaining on the battlefield," runs the indictment of the Russian Imperial Commission of Inquiry, "or taken prisoner could be sure that, unarmed, helpless, and suffering as he might be, he would not be shot, bayoneted, or otherwise done away with, or perhaps put to torture at the hands of a brutalised foe." The Report bears out this accusation by printing in summarised form the evidence of Russian soldiers themselves. Everything that follows is taken exclusively from the mouth of Russian soldiers escaped from German captivity, or from members of the first party of repatriated invalids who arrived in Petrograd on August 4, 1915, and who personally experienced the enemy's cruelty or were eye-witnesses of the sufferings endured by others.

### RUSSIAN PRISONERS BURNED TO DEATH.

On the 18th of February, 1915, during an engagement at the village of Novi-Dvori, in the province of Lomzha, the Germans captured 30 wounded Russian soldiers and lodged them in a separate house. Here they were kept for three days without food or medical assistance. Drinking water was given to them by some of the Germans of a sanitary detachment in the village. When the Germans withdrew, on the third night, they set fire to this house, having first of all put a number of cartridges in the roof. When the wounded Russians inside began to smell smoke and hear explosions on the roof, those who were in the least degree able to move started to crawl out of the house through a door that had been left unlocked, but only ten managed to escape; the rest, most of whom had received very severe wounds, were burnt to death.

### PRISONERS SHOT.

On the 28th of August, 1914, during the retreat of the Russian forces from East Prussia, Ensign Ilija Andreyevich Andreyev, aged 30, of an infantry regiment, was anxious to save a maxim gun that had been abandoned on the positions, and for that purpose he remained behind with some of his men, and was eventually obliged to return to the regiment through a locality occupied by the enemy.

Towards morning, on learning from his scouts of the approach of a patrol of the enemy, Andreyev and his men dug out for themselves a place of concealment in the steep, broken bank of the river, and from this refuge they soon saw an entire squadron of the enemy's cavalry going through the river as an escort to about 50 Russian prisoners. On reaching the opposite bank the Germans reformed into a semicircle round the prisoners and fired two volleys into their midst, killing them all, after which they galloped off in the opposite direction.

### WOUNDED SHOT.

On the 7th of August, 1914, near Gumbinnen, during a German attack on the Russian positions, a senior subaltern of the — regiment, named Alexis Smerdov, aged 25, who was lying on the battlefield wounded in both legs, saw how the Germans bayoneted and shot all the Russians left in the trenches, including the commander of his company, Bogdanov, and the sub-lieutenant, Rogosky. Smerdov nearly met with the same fate, but fortunately at the moment when a German soldier was about to bayonet him, a German subaltern intervened, and merely deprived him of watch, field glass, whistle, and compass. They then left Smerdov for a time in peace.

On the same day, during the retirement of the Germans in close columns, Smerdov noticed as they passed near to him that they shot as many as 30 of the severely wounded Russians lying on the ground. A German stretcher-bearer, with a Red Cross badge on his left arm, eventually came up to Smerdov, and in answer to the latter's signs expressing a wish to have the wounds in his legs bandaged, this German non-combatant drew a revolver from his pocket and fired two shots at the wounded Smerdov. The second smashed the bone in Smerdov's right arm. . . . The foregoing was attested by a combined judicial and medical investigation.

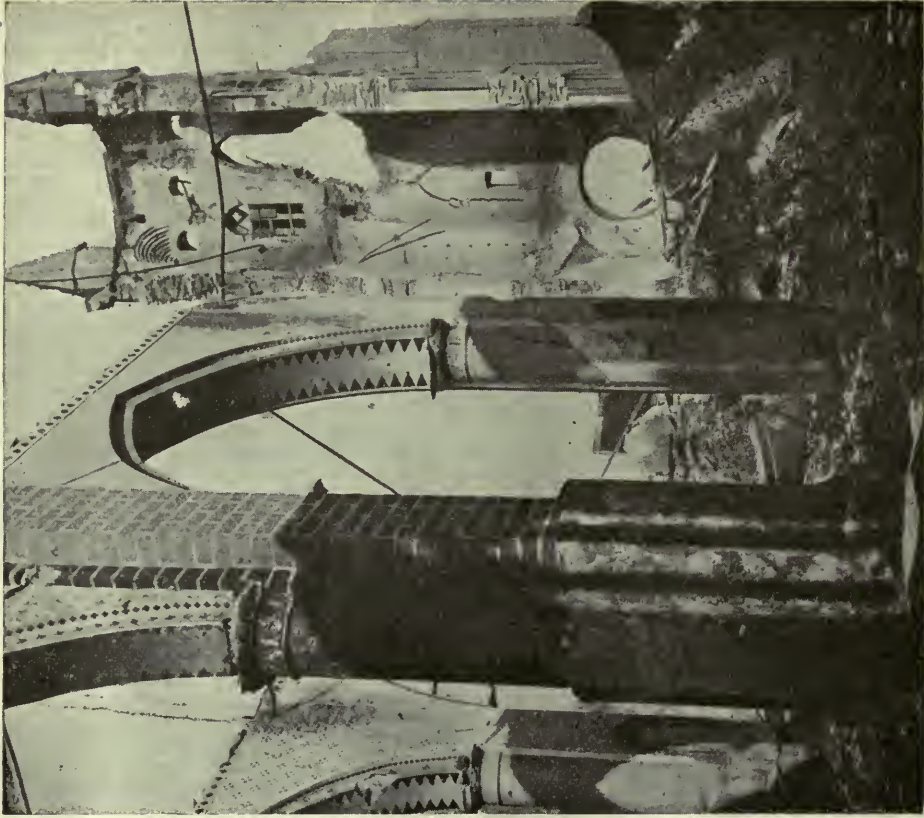
### THE CASE OF LIEUT. ZINOVIEV.

Ivan Efremov Zinoviev, senior subaltern in a Cossack regiment, received a wound in his left thigh while taking part in operations near Tarnova on the 23rd of May, 1915, and was immediately afterwards made prisoner by the Germans.

On the following day Zinoviev underwent examination in the presence of eight German officers and two doctors. He was unable to specify the troops to which these examining officers belonged, but he noticed that the facings on their coat collars were green and that one of them had the number "21" on his forage cap.

As Zinoviev professed ignorance in reply to all questions regarding the number and positions of the Russian forces, the interpreting officer struck him several times with his fist in the face and used the expression, "Speak up, you Russian swine!"

Zinoviev was then led into another room, where there was a dynamo engine as well as a table and a cabinet, or bookcase. Here they stripped him naked and placed him upon the table. Having first of all examined his wound, the doctors began to feel the calf of his left leg and discuss something with one of the officers present. As soon as the conversation was over this officer took a needle attached to the wires of the electrical machine and applied it to a place on Zinoviev's leg indicated by the doctors. Zinoviev, however, in spite of the electric shock, stubbornly refused to answer the questions, which were put to him



**OLD CHURCH IN FLANDERS REDUCED TO RUINS.**  
There is no need to search for ruined churches in villages and towns the Germans have occupied or been near.



**A CALAIS HOUSE WRECKED BY A BOMB.**  
View of the Interior.



## BAYONETING THE WOUNDED

by the officer, every time the latter shut off the electricity. This torture lasted half an hour, and one of the doctors watched Zinoviev's pulse all the time. The same torturing process was repeated on the second and third days, and at last the electric current was made so strong that Zinoviev, in describing his condition, declared that he was "all of a shake."

On the fourth day Zinoviev was again interrogated, but although the German officers used very bad language and threatened to "skin him alive!" he persisted in his refusal to answer questions. Being, therefore, unable to extract any information from him by these means, the interpreting officer brought a red hot bar of iron, about as thick as a finger, and ordered his men to place the prisoner undergoing torture in a sitting posture on a chair. The doctors then took hold of his arms while the officer lifted up his legs and rubbed the red hot iron over the soles of Zinoviev's feet. After a while one of the doctors who was counting Zinoviev's pulse made a sign for the torture to cease. Zinoviev fainted, and afterwards recovered his senses in the cart shed where he was being kept a prisoner. . . . Zinoviev subsequently escaped. A medical examination which was made of the scars left from the burns and from the electrical needle confirmed the truth of his story.

## OTHER REFINEMENTS OF TORTURE.

The following three cases are confirmed by photographs of the injuries inflicted:

Vasili Vodnyanoi, a corporal, was made prisoner by German troops on April 27. He refused to give information as to the position of the Russian Staff and the number of Russian infantry troops. The German subaltern cut off the lobe of Vodnyanoi's left ear and the helix of his right ear. The German then said, "We'll teach you how to speak," whereupon he seized Vodnyanoi by the throat and throttled him until he fainted. After lying senseless for several hours he recovered, and found that his tongue had been cut out.

## No. 2.

Porphyry Panasuk, senior subaltern, was captured by a German picket and taken to the village of Kozzokhi. German officers questioned him as to the positions of the Russian army corps, "and promised to reward him handsomely for the desired information." Panasuk refused. An officer brought a small pair of scissors, "with which the officer of the General Staff cut off the lobe of Panasuk's right ear. But as even this did not induce Panasuk to comply, the officer clipped off three more pieces from the same ear of his stoical victim, whom he then seized so violently by the nose that the latter was much injured and bent. Finally, to complete this savage treatment of an inoffensive prisoner, the officer referred to struck Panasuk in the face. The same evening Panasuk succeeded in effecting his escape, and in the course of several days reached our troops."

## No. 3.

A Cossack soldier, Ivan Pichuev, taken prisoner by the Germans in May, refused information as to the positions and number of the Russian troops. The Germans hung him up by the hands, then suspended him head downwards, and as this treatment failed to produce the desired effect, several German officers, assisted by a German soldier acting under their orders, proceeded to clip off the lobe of Pichuev's right ear. Even this did not shake his firm resolve not to betray the Russian army, and therefore his tormenters next carved off the upper part, or helix, of his left ear. Finally they slit four long parallel gashes in the flesh of his right hip to imitate the two stripes of a Cossack's trousers, and threatened to hang him outright in the following day. But Pichuev succeeded in escaping next day and reached the Russian lines.

After a fight on the 1st of November, 1914, a wounded corporal of the 2nd Regiment of riflemen, named Vasili Isayev, was unable to retreat with his comrades and fell to the ground exhausted. A German soldier soon came up to him and thrust his bayonet into Isayev's arm in order, apparently, to be sure that he was still alive. The German then tried to bayonet him again, this time in the breast, but Isayev, mustering all his remaining strength warded off the stroke by catching hold of the bayonet. The German, however, succeeded in wrenching his weapon from the grasp of Isayev, and bayoneted the latter right through the groin. Thinking he had inflicted a mortal wound, the German then went away.

A private soldier of the 141st Mojaisky regiment, named Porphyri Subbotin, was wounded on the 16th of August, 1914, in East Prussia. He remained on the battlefield, and was unmercifully beaten and kicked about by four German soldiers. A passing German officer, who seemed to be disgusted at this outrageous proceeding, ordered the soldiers to leave the wounded man alone. They went away, in obedience to the officer's orders, but one of the soldiers first thrust his bayonet right through Subbotin's breast and another shot him in the head, though, fortunately for Subbotin, the bullet only passed through his cap and caused no injury.

Paul Kreschenko-Kravchenko, a private in the 102nd Regiment of Viatka, was wounded and left on the battlefield, after the fighting of the 26th of August, 1914. Before his eyes the Germans made prisoners of the remaining men of the company to which he belonged, and shot them all on the spot. Kravchenko lay on the field nearly two days, and witnessed how the Germans sought out those among the Russian wounded who were still alive and bayoneted them.

A private of the 1st Regiment of Turkestan riflemen, named Leonti Ungurian, was wounded by a rifle bullet in a fight on the 1st of October, 1914, near Lyck, and fell to the ground by the side of a badly wounded under-officer of the same regiment. The latter was beaten to death by German soldiers with the butt-ends of their rifles before the eyes of Ungurian.

One of the wounded men in a battle on the 26th of August in East Prussia, Gabriel Savushinsky, private in the 160th Novotrotsky Regiment, being unable to raise himself, and suffering much pain, noticed a badly wounded comrade of the same regiment lying not far off, and he called out to him for help to dress his wounds. The wounded man crawled over to Savushinsky, and between them Savushinsky's wounds were bound up with the bandages which they carried in their kit. After the wounds had been dressed the two men were approached by a mounted party of German patrols. The officer, as soon as he saw the wounded men lying on the ground, rode up to them, and with the words, "Ah, you are Russians; there's Berlin for you!" fired his revolver at the man who had assisted Savushinsky, killing him on the spot.

## WOUNDED AND A PRISONER.

A practical view is taken in the Russian Report of the omission of the Germans to help wounded Russians left on the field. Such help, it is observed, depends upon very many conditions and circumstances which cannot be foreseen. The Germans are not blamed, therefore, for the fact that Russian wounded sometimes remained for days without medical assistance, and often succumbed from delay in attending to their wounds. But "there can be no justification for an enemy who not only makes no effort to lessen the sufferings of the wounded, but deliberately increases such sufferings in order to make cruel sport of sick and defenceless fellow-creatures."

## THE LOOK OF A COSSACK.

A private named Leonti Musika, of the Life Guard Regiment of Keksholm, was spectator of a scene in which



A SAINT IN A SENTRY BOX.  
Figure of St. Johann at Hamburg nailed in  
various places.



THE GIANT HINDENBURG STATUE  
IN BERLIN.

## GERMANY'S NAIL STATUES.

German soldiers amused themselves at the cost of a poor Cossack, very badly injured, who was lying on the ground waiting to have his wounds attended to by the doctors. The Germans ordered him to get up and show them "the look of a Cossack." This was impossible for the extremely weak and wounded Cossack, and the German soldiers then set to beating and kicking the unfortunate man until they silenced him for ever.

A private of the 101st regiment of Perm, named Setruk-Abregun-Musesov, after the battle of the 26th of August, 1914, at the Mazura Lakes, was one of about 20 wounded Russians whom our stretcher bearers were unable to remove owing to the enemy's advance. All the wounded were killed by the approaching German soldiers. One of them was just going to bayonet Musesov, when a German officer stopped him with the words, uttered in the Russian language, "Why stab a wounded man?" The officer then ordered Musesov to be picked up and taken to the nearest ambulance station. On the way there the German soldiers came across a Cossack wounded in the stomach lying behind some stones. They put Musesov down, went up to the Cossack, and cut off one after the other all his fingers on both hands except the thumbs, then they amputated his ears and his nose, and finally killed the unfortunate man outright with a sword-bayonet. The tortured Cossack implored Musesov to intercede for him with his murderers, but Musesov was unable to move and could render no assistance; he only looked on with horror at the ghastly scene.

#### GERMAN MERCY.

During the fighting in East Prussia on the 14th of August, 1914. Private Ignatius Stimelevsky, of the

8th Esthonian regiment, was wounded in both arms. He became very weak and finally unconscious from great loss of blood. On coming to his senses, after some time, he saw standing before him a German soldier, who said in the Polish language, "You have lost so much blood that you cannot live in any case, so you must be killed," and, suiting the action to the word, he was about to bayonet Stimelevsky when a bullet struck him in the head and he fell dead.

#### BURYING THE WOUNDED.

A private of the 107th Molodechensky regiment, named Napoleon Yadvershis, was wounded in the leg on the 28th of August, 1914, in the fighting in the region of the Mazura Lakes, and he remained lying in a trench with other wounded soldiers of his company. After the Russians had retired the Germans rushed into the trench and began to throw earth over the wounded. Yadvershis made signs to them that he preferred to be bayoneted rather than be buried alive, but the Germans went on covering him over with dirt. Fortunately, a German officer entered the trench in time, and drove his soldiers away with a whip. He then ordered them to dig out the wounded men at once.

Gregory Krivenko, a private of the 169th Novotrotsky regiment, who was wounded, and after the fighting lay on the field for six days without food or drink, was a witness of the way in which the German soldiers bayoneted two wounded Russians lying not far off from him.

## XII.—GERMAN TREACHERY IN THE FIELD.

### USING SOLDIERS AS SCREENS.

IN the French Official Reports a number of cases are cited in which the Germans forced French prisoners to act as screens for German troops—a proceeding dastardly in itself and expressly forbidden by Convention.

#### No. 108.

*Statement by Private Cabioch, of the 321st Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing the circumstances under which certain prisoners were placed in front of the German troops.*

The undersigned, Cabioch, Reservist of the 321st Regiment of Infantry, hereby declares that, having been made prisoner by the Germans, in company with several other soldiers, following upon a bayonet assault, he and his comrades were compelled to form part of the line of German skirmishers under the following circumstances:

At 8 p.m. on the 13th September a considerable portion of the 4th section of the 24th Company of the 321st Regiment of Infantry (Reserve) was taken prisoner, during an engagement which took place about 1,000 yards to the north-east of the farm of Confrécourt (3 kilometres south-west from Nouvion). Immediately afterwards several German soldiers, whose rank the witness was unable to distinguish, put the prisoners into the front line, threatening them with their revolvers.

Firing then became brisk between the German lines and those of the French close to them. The witness having had occasion to notice that the Germans had left behind

them such French prisoners as were wounded, dropped to earth after running a few yards, and pretended to be seriously wounded. Thus he remained lying on the ground, and on the following day at about 4 a.m. succeeded in returning to the French lines in company with Corporal Boutry of the same section, who had been wounded. He declares that several of his comrades fell, either killed or wounded, at the place where the Germans had put them into the front rank

#### No. 109.

*Depositions of four soldiers of the 216th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), describing how on September 20 French prisoners were exposed to the fire of the French troops.*

The undersigned: Jean Talou, corporal in the 216th Regiment of Infantry (Reserve), and Jean-Pierre Degruel, Pierre Thévenet, and Pierre Prost, privates in the same, declare that, having been made prisoners by the Germans, they and several other soldiers were forcibly placed by the Germans against their will in front of the German lines, under the following circumstances:

On September 20, between four and five o'clock, being in a sort of trench formed by the edge of a ditch near the farm of Confrécourt (3 kilometres south-west of Nouvion), they were suddenly surrounded by German soldiers, who made them prisoners and took them to an adjacent haystack. A few minutes after a German column of about 500 men, in formation of fours, advanced in silence, as if for the purpose of surrounding the farm. The officer at the head of this column, noticing the prisoners and their



**BOMBS ON "THE FORTRESS OF LONDON."**

Locality, during the raid on London, where a bomb fell between two houses. On the left a mother and daughter were sleeping. They were thrown into the street through the place where the ground floor window should have been, both escaping with their lives. On the right a little boy lying in his cot was buried under the debris of the roof, and, in order to release him, the whole roof had to be lifted up, so securely was the cot pinned down. A large house a few yards away suffered very badly. The bomb fell right on the centre of it, killing instantly two children and severely injuring a third child and the father and mother.

[Photo: Washams Ltd.]

guard, ordered them briefly to advance towards the ditch whence they had come, threatening them with his revolver. The German soldiers thereupon hurried the prisoners to the edge of the ditch, which formed a parapet, put them in line in their own ranks, and opened fire upon the French lines. Volleys were exchanged on either side, in the course of which French soldiers were struck by French bullets. Among them were the following :

Lieutenant X . . . killed.  
Sergeant Lasablière, wounded.  
Corporals Baster and Noailly, wounded.  
The two sappers, Ravassart and Malard, wounded  
The two soldiers, Machon and Bertoix, wounded

The French soldiers were kept in this position until 2 p.m., when they were rescued during a counter-attack by some battalions of Alpine Chasseurs.

#### No. 110.

*Extracts from report by Lieutenant-Colonel Payerne, commanding the 68th Regiment of Infantry, to the General in command of the 9th Army Corps on occurrences which took place on the front of the 68th Regiment, September 25-26, 1914 :*

PROSNES, October 5, 1914.

In compliance with the instructions contained in service order No. 1041 of the 9th Army Corps, dated 3rd inst., I have the honour to forward the following supplementary information, having reference to the events which took place on the 25th and 26th September on the front of the 1st, 3rd, and 9th Companies of the 68th Regiment :

On the 25th September at about 6.30 p.m. Major Bardoller with the 1st, 3rd, and 9th Companies proceeded to the assault of the German trenches opposite to his lines, 1,200 yards to the north-east of Hill 98. He took them, entrenched himself on the ground, and, preceded by scouts, pushed on into the wood with the 1st and 9th Companies.

At about 7.30 p.m., after a counter-attack by the Germans, a certain number of men belonging to these French companies, and in particular to the 9th, which was on our left, were made prisoners (about 50 men). The rest of the companies were brought back to hold the German trenches, where they remained till dawn without being attacked.

During the night of the 25th September the prisoners, who had been disarmed by the Germans, were employed in making a trench opposite to the French lines. Corporal Devergne, of the 9th Company, has certified to this fact. At dawn the Germans made a further attack on the front of the 9th, 1st, and 3rd Companies. In this attack they compelled the prisoners whom they had taken on the previous evening to march in front of them, forming them up in columns of fours, surrounded by the Germans in column. They were followed at a distance of about 150 yards by a line of skirmishers, which in its turn was followed by troops in sections by fours. To this also Corporal Devergne has testified.

Moreover, he states that the men of the 1st Company, opposite to which he found himself amongst the prisoners in column formation, hesitated to fire on seeing the Frenchmen. Eventually, however, they opened fire on the German columns to the right and left, whereupon the Germans, having suffered several casualties, reformed around the prisoners and fell back with them. A little later Corporal Devergne was able to escape and to rejoin the 1st Company.

Sub-Lieutenant Terrier, of the 1st Company, which was attacked by the Germans at dawn, declares that he saw the Germans threatening the prisoners with revolvers and rifles, and occasionally firing to compel them to march in front of them. Adjutant Dufour, of the same company, confirms the statement of Lieutenant Terrier.

Sub-Lieutenant Gallet, of the 8th Company, was in reserve behind the 1st Company. He was sent up with his section to disengage the right of the 1st Company, which was in danger of envelopment. He made a counter-attack

on the Germans, killing two officers, whose field-glasses he brought back, and driving back the German left. He also witnessed the incident described above and confirms the two other witnesses.

On our left the German counter-attack, extending along the front held by the 1st Company to that of the 9th (Lieutenant Foujanet), was screened by French prisoners, for which reason the non-commissioned officers hesitated to open fire, and a slight rearward movement took place. This, however, was rapidly checked.

This German attack at dawn was, in fact, repulsed, thanks to the intervention of the section of the 8th Company on the right of the 1st Company, and also to the effectual, though somewhat tardy, fire of the 1st Company in the trenches.

#### CONCLUSIONS.

The interrogatory made by me has elicited the following certain facts :

(1) The Germans forced disarmed French prisoners to work during the night of the 25th, and made them dig a trench opposite to the French trenches.

The French obeyed this order quietly. (Deposition of Corporal Devergne.)

(2) At daybreak the German counter-attacking force was preceded by the French prisoners, who were threatened by the Germans with revolvers to make them advance. (Deposition of Captain de Salvador, Sub-Lieutenants Terrier and Gallet, and Adjutant Dufour.)

(3) None of the three or four men who escaped with Corporal Devergne are to be found among the units of the 68th Regiment. They must have been killed in the fighting of the following days.

We, the undersigned, hereby declare and certify that the facts which we have set down in the above report are the simple truth. Signed by MAJOR SALVADOR, LIEUTENANT FOUJANET, LIEUTENANT TERRIER, SUB-LIEUTENANT GALLET, ADJUTANT DUFOUR, and CORPORAL DEVERGNE.

The following cases are those in which the Germans substituted women and a baby for men as a screen :—

*Report of Major Hennoegen to the Major commanding the 354th Infantry Regiment, describing the manner in which certain German soldiers used women and children as a screen on September 23, 1914.*

In reporting the number of officers killed and wounded in my battalion on September 23, 1914, i.e. :

Blondet, Lieutenant, Reserve, killed,  
Champlauvier, Captain, killed,  
Vignoli, Lieutenant, Reserve, wounded,  
Courtois, Sub-Lieutenant, Reserve, wounded,

I wish to record a circumstance which it would be well to communicate to headquarters.

During the attack on the village of Autriche, which Lieutenant Courtois had entered with his section, he saw that all the women and children of the place were put at the windows, with the Germans behind them.

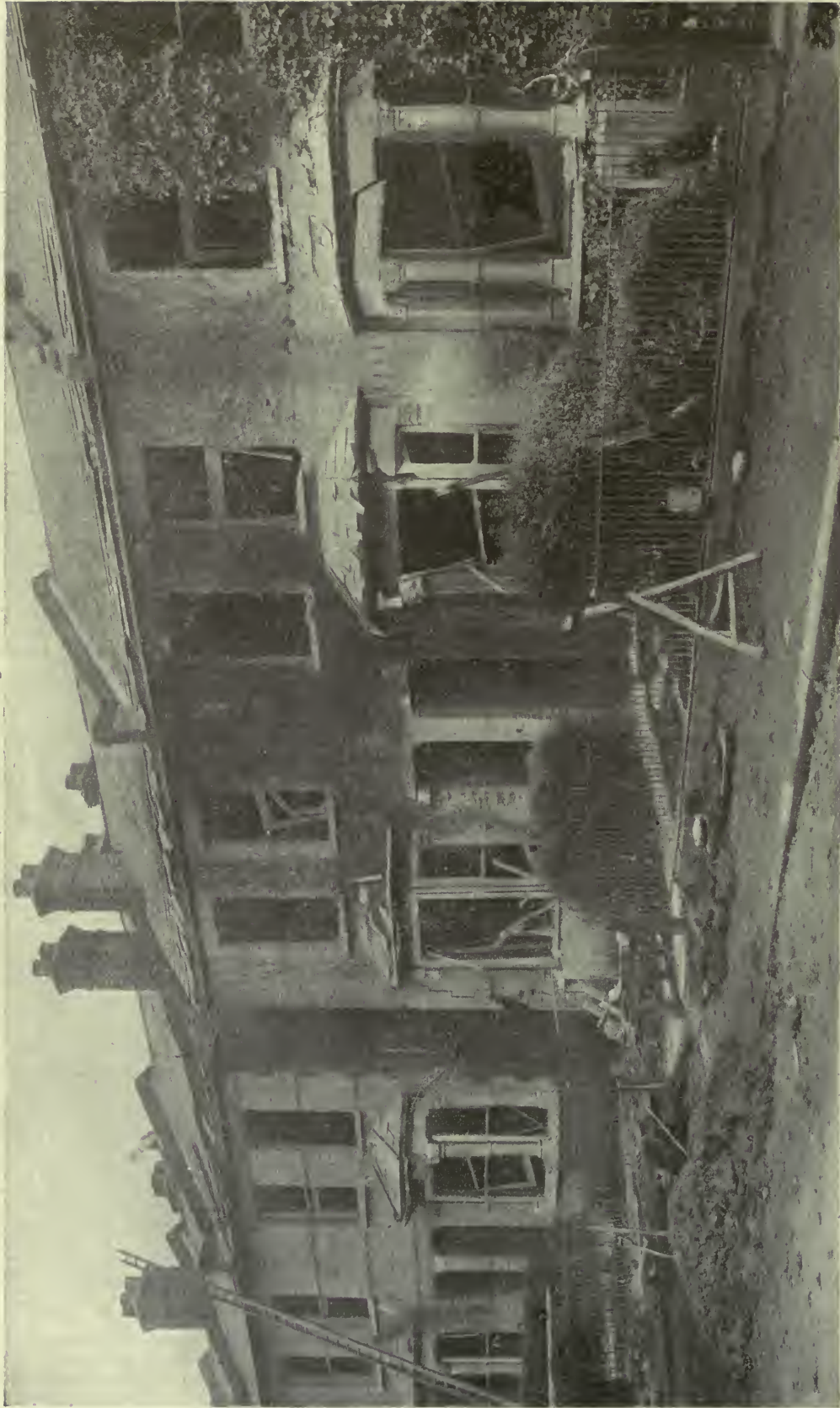
Thus the Germans fired on our soldiers, who were unable to return their fire.

Lieutenant Courtois was wounded under the following conditions. Arriving at a house at the corner of a street, he was stopped by several Germans who were at the windows, and one of them called out to him in good French: "Lieutenant, surrender!" "Ground arms!" cried M. Courtois to him. At this answer he and some dozen of his men were struck down by a volley.

*Report forwarded by Lieutenant Aucour to the Colonel commanding the 2nd Regiment of Dragoons, describing the circumstances in which a detachment of German infantry used two women as a screen on October 19, 1914, in Belgium :*

VESTROSSBECK (BELGIUM), October 19, 1914.

I have the honour to inform you that at 2 p.m. on the 19th October, having taken up a position with my platoon



[Photo: Walsnams Ltd.]

**MORE ATTACKS ON "FORTIFIED PLACES."**

During the raid on London on Oct. 13, 1915, remarkable damage was inflicted in an area which consisted entirely of what may be termed working-class property. The damage done was exclusively suffered by private traders or householders, who behaved with the utmost heroism and coolness and in some cases, loss of life, with no compensating military value for the enemy whatever. In another area attacked there was not a single factory or business house, and hardly any shops, no military encampments, no store sheds, no aerial defences, and not even searchlights. The photograph shows how a bomb severely damaged eight small houses.

near to a barricade which I was defending at the north-west outlet from Roulers (Belgium), there appeared before me a vanguard detachment of German infantry. This troop, consisting of only seven or eight men, was commanded by an officer, who was driving in front of him two women, one of whom held a baby in her arms, which she was endeavouring to protect with a red garment rolled into a bundle. For fear of hitting either of the poor women, I hesitated to open fire on these soldiers, but eventually,

fearing the arrival of reinforcements, I directed certain good shots to fire independently, telling them to aim rather high. . . . This had the result of dispersing the enemy. I report this incident, to be used as may seem fit. It is probable, to judge by the prisoners whom we had taken on the previous evening, that the unit in question belonged to the 213th or 214th Regiment of Landwehr.

(Signed) AUCOUR.

### XIII.—PRISONERS IN GERMAN HANDS.

*"The bird flew to the place where I was attempting his deliverance, and, thrusting his head through the trellis, pressed his breast against it, as if impatient. 'I fear, poor creature,' said I, 'I cannot set thee at liberty.' 'No,' said the starling; 'I can't get out, I can't get out,' said the starling."*—STERNE.

#### I.—BRITISH, FRENCH, AND RUSSIAN EXPERIENCES.

AS soon as information could make its way out from Germany of the treatment which prisoners had received and were receiving at German hands, it became certain that in this respect, as in others, the Germans were acting with determined barbarity. The first prisoners of war were vilely treated from the moment of capture, were insulted, threatened, and beaten; on the journey to the prison camps they were herded in trucks with less humanity than would be extended to cattle; and in the prison camps were robbed and starved. This was in the days of the war when the Germans, drunk with success and with their bloody march across Belgium, entertained no apprehensions of any reprisals, and already regarded their enemies as conquered. There has been some improvement of conditions as time has gone on, due to a diminishing belief in complete German triumph; due also to the intervention of the United States Embassy in Berlin. The threats of reprisals which have been made by France and Russia have also tempered the brutality, random or systematic, with which French and Russian prisoners were being treated; and there is reason to believe that the lot of British prisoners, who were more hated than the others, improved also. But even in the month of November, Mr. Lithgow Osborne, of the United States Embassy, could observe of the treatment of British prisoners in the camp at Wittenberg that "Instead of the Germans regarding their charges as honourable prisoners of war, it appeared to me that the men were regarded as criminals, whom a *régime* of fear alone would suffice to keep in obedience."

#### WITTENBERG AND GARDELEGEN.

At Wittenberg a German soldier, according to the official American report, struck a wounded and crippled man because he was too slow, and a British medical officer for no reason at all; but these were trivial outrages by the side of those which have come to our ears from the lips of those who have escaped, or who have been released from German prison camps, and who are under no obligations to close their mouths. It will not be till the end of the war that we shall learn the worst about these camps. Most of the information which has been made public comes from officers, who, though they were often insulted and often harshly treated did, not suffer

the worse indignities inflicted on the rank and file. If indignities were all, the prisoners might be held to have got off lightly; but the prison treatment, added to the miserable and insufficient food, the want of clothing, the absence of sanitation or proper sleeping accommodation, brought about a great amount of sickness, with which the Germans made no efforts to cope. Many prisoners lost their lives through pneumonia, typhoid, and typhus. The Russian Commission of Inquiry reports an outbreak of "hunger typhus" which cost several hundred lives in a camp where the majority were Russian prisoners.

An account of a typhus outbreak in a prisoners' camp at Gardelegen, which was contributed by Major P. C. T. Davy and Capt. A. J. Brown, released R.A.M.C. officers, to the *British Medical Journal*, furnishes a very disturbing picture of the conditions under which prisoners live or are tended in case of sickness. The number of prisoners was between 11,000 and 12,000, chiefly Russians and French, with about 1,000 Belgians and 230 British prisoners. The hospital contained 200 beds, and was grossly overcrowded in ordinary times. In the epidemic of typhus there were 2,000 cases.

The accommodation for washing was very limited, and many men had to wait a month or even two or three months for a bath. The sleeping arrangements and the food were bad and insufficient; an appreciation of them is necessary to understand the conditions under which the epidemic started. When it did start the German officers and under-officers and men were withdrawn. But the prisoners were allowed to mingle freely. The German doctor stayed at his post, but he died from typhus a few days after the epidemic declared itself. All the German orderlies were withdrawn. The sick were nursed by their fellow-prisoners. Of the 2,000 who suffered from the disease 300 died. Of the 230 British, 129 contracted typhus, and 7 died; 22 British acted as nursing orderlies, and 20 of them had typhus; 2 died. There were 16 doctors of various nationalities and 10 French abbés; 5 of the abbés died in nursing the sick, and 2 of the doctors. Nearly all had the disease. The point specially to be remembered is that the Germans did nothing. They let the prisoners die.

#### UNIFORMITY OF ILL-TREATMENT.

It is possible that the camps and the provision for prisoners have improved since the date of the epidemic at Gardelegen; but nothing can ever obliterate the



**KULTUR IN THE STUDIO.**

State of a Belgian artist's pictures after a "peaceful" occupation of a town by German marines. The scene is only typical of the manner in which in many instances private residences were treated, furniture being either looted or smashed and the house desecrated. The studio in question belonged to a well-known Belgian artist, Isidore Opsomer, in Liège.



disgrace to Germany of the way in which, in the first year of the war, the prisoners were oppressed, injured, and insulted. It is generally believed that English prisoners were treated worst; and several English witnesses say so. Colour is lent to the accusation by the German attitude to England and by some internal evidence. But there is not a great deal to choose. There is in some respects a remarkable uniformity in the methods and manners of the Germans to all their captives of whatever nationality. The prisoners' overcoats are stolen, whether they were made in England, France, or Russia. Belgian and French soldiers or civilians are insulted at Aachen or other railway stations on the route to German prisons. Russian wounded and Russian doctors are spat upon and insulted and stacked in horse trucks just as English officers and wounded were; and all are impartially called "*Schweinehund*" by the Germans. The experiences of Major C. B. Vandeleur of the 1st Cameronians, who escaped from Crefeld, and who was able to give an account of his experiences in a letter to the Foreign Office last April, might serve for those of many other officers among our Allies.

#### MAJOR VANDELEUR'S STATEMENT.

Major Vandeleur was taken prisoner on the 13th October, 1914, close to La Bassée by the Prussian Guard Cavalry. He was well treated by this corps and was given food and shelter, though he observes that the other officers and men who were in charge of the same guard were not treated so well, for they were given no food. Next morning he was marched with four other officers and about 200 men to Lens. They then went on to Douay.

"At Douay I was detained on the square in front of the Hotel de-Ville with a sentry over me, and was subjected to continual abuse and revilement. On the arrival of the other prisoners we were all confined in a large shed for the night. No food, except a little provided by the French Red Cross Society, was given, also no straw, and we spent a terrible night there, men being obliged to walk about all night to keep warm, as their great-coats had been taken from them.

"On October 17th, in the morning, the French Red Cross people gave us what they could in food, and did their very best, in spite of opposition from the Germans. At about 2 p.m. on the same day we were all marched off to the railway station, being reviled at and cursed all the way by German officers as well as by German soldiers. One of our officers was spat on by a German officer.

#### THE CATTLE TRUCK JOURNEY.

"At the station we were driven into closed-in wagons, from which horses had just been removed, 52 men being crowded into the one in which the other four officers and myself were. So tight were we packed that there was only room for some of us to sit down on the floor. This floor was covered fully 3 inches deep in fresh manure, and the stench was almost asphyxiating. We were boxed up in this foul wagon, with practically no ventilation, for thirty hours, with no food, and no opportunity of attending to purposes of Nature. All along the line we were cursed by officers and soldiers alike at the various stations, and at Mons Bergen I was pulled out in front of the wagon by the order of the officer in charge of the station, and, after cursing me in filthy language for some ten minutes, he ordered one of his soldiers to kick me back into the wagon, which he did, sending me sprawling into the filthy mess at the bottom of the wagon. I should like to mention here that I am thoroughly conversant with German, and understand everything that was said. Only at one station on the road was any attempt made on the part of German officers to interfere and stop their men from cursing us. This officer appeared to be sorry for the sad plight in which we were. I should like also to mention that two of the German Guard also appeared to be sympathetic and sorry for us; but they were able to do little or nothing to protect us.

"Up to this time I had managed to retain my overcoat,

but it was now forcibly taken from me by an officer at a few stations further on.

"On reaching the German-Belgian frontier the French prisoners were given some potato soup. The people in charge of it told us that none was for us, but that if any was left over after the French had been fed we should get what remained. This is in accordance with the general treatment of British prisoners by the Germans, who always endeavour to attend to our necessities last, and to put us to as much inconvenience and ill-treatment as possible. We subsequently got a little soup and a few slices of bread amongst 25 British prisoners in the same wagon with me.

"On October 18th, early, we arrived at Cologne, and the four officers and myself were removed from the wagon and, after some delay, sent on to Crefeld.

#### THE BLACK HOLE.

"I said that 52 prisoners were in the wagon with me when we left Douay. These were: here follow the names of four officers, myself, and 15 English soldiers and 32 French civilians of all grades of society. It is difficult to indicate or give a proper idea of the indescribably wretched condition in which we were in, after being starved and confined in the manner stated for three days and three nights. As is well known, one of these wagons is considered to be able to accommodate six horses and 40 men, and this only with the doors open so as to admit of ventilation. What with the filth of the interior, the number of people confined in it, and the absence of ventilation, it seemed to recall something of what one has read of the Black Hole of Calcutta. To give an idea of the state of mind to which we have been reduced, I got one of the better-class French prisoners to secrete a letter to my wife in the hope that he might be able to get it out to her when he reached his destination, as these French civilian prisoners were being treated better than ourselves. They all expressed great pity for the way in which we were being treated.

"I found out that the wagon in front of us was full up with English soldiers. This particular wagon had no ventilation slit of any sort or description, and men were crowded into this even worse than they were in the wagon in which I was. They banged away continually on the wooden sides of the van, and finally, as I supposed the Germans thought that they might be suffocated, a carpenter was got, who cut a small round hole in one of the sides.

"I am strongly of opinion myself that this brutal treatment of British officers and men on their way to a place of internment is deliberately arranged for by superior authority with the object of making us as miserable and despicable objects as possible.

#### THE RANK AND FILE IN THE CAMPS.

At Crefeld, Major Vandeleur continues, the treatment improved; and there was not much to complain of. But after describing the food, accommodation, and general arrangements, he proceeds:

I would especially call attention to the barbarous way in which British soldiers are being treated in the various laagers of the Germans. The information which follows has been obtained from the British orderlies who came to Crefeld as servants, and also from English and French medical officers who had been in the camps. The men all had their great-coats, and in many cases their tunics as well and their money, taken away from them, and are in great need of clothing, especially underclothing. It appears that the Germans supplied them with wooden clogs when their boots were worn out. The men state that they slept on straw which had not been changed for months, and was quite sodden and rotten. All the men who came as orderlies were crawling with vermin, and half of them were suffering from the itch. The medical officer had to isolate these men before they could be employed as servants. I was also informed that the feeding arrange-

## Neuwied am Rhein

Zehnklassige höhere Mädchenschule u. Pensionat  
der evangel. Brüdergemeinde.

H14)

Prospekt durch den Direktor H. Gammert.

## Ueber Möbeltransporte

aus den Hauptorten

nh

## Belgiens nach Deutschland

und Oesterreich Ungarn erteilt Auskünfte u. Kostenanschläge

Speditionen & Lagerhaus Akt. Ges. Aachen.

## Barackenbau.

(Vr

Wir liefern Holzbaracken zur Unterbringung von Ge-  
fangenen für die Großindustrie und städt. Verwaltungen.  
Kostenlose Angebote. Kürzeste Lieferfrist.

Wilh. Becher & Co., U.-Barmen.

### FURNITURE REMOVED.

Removing the spoils. An enterprising furniture remover's advertisement from the *Kölnische Zeitung* offering to undertake the removals from Belgium to Germany or Austria.

## Verkauf von Beutepferden

durch die Landwirtschaftskammer unter  
Mitwirkung der Rheinischen Pferdezentrale  
am Dienstag den 27. Oktober u. Mittwoch  
den 28. Oktober, von 10 Uhr ab  
auf dem Schlachthof in Köln.

Es gelangen 400 Beutepferde (Absatzfohlen, Jährlinge,  
Zweijährige, Gebrauchspferde, 8 Hengste) zur Versteigerung.

Als Ankäufer sind **nur Landwirte** aus der Rheinprovinz  
und den benachbarten Provinzen zugelassen, die sich als  
solche durch eine amtliche Bescheinigung ausweisen können,  
und die sich schriftlich verpflichten, die Pferde nur im eigenen  
landwirtschaftlichen Betriebe zu verwenden.

Die genauen Bedingungen werden vor Beginn der Ver-  
steigerung verlesen.

Der Verkauf erfolgt **ohne Garantie nur gegen Bar-  
zahlung.**

Zum Versteigerungsplatze haben nur Landwirte, die sich  
als solche durch eine amtliche Bescheinigung ausweisen  
müssen, Zutritt. Rc

## Hebel-Stanzmaschinen

4 Stck. (neu), auch z. Prägen, Pressen, Schneiden einzurichten,  
für 1600. M z. verk. Näheres Postschließfach 130, Köln. (1q

### LONG COVETED WEALTH.

Announcement of a big sale of cattle in the *Kölnische Zeitung*. The booty for sale came from Belgium. A notice of a German Commission for the "purchase" of horses winds up with the warning that "Any persons neglecting to bring their horses to the Commission will be liable to have their stock requisitioned without indemnity."

ments for the British soldiers were very bad indeed, and as the men had no money to supplement their rations they were in a half-starved condition, which their appearance corroborated."

#### TREATMENT OF WOUNDED PRISONERS.

In *Blackwood's Magazine* for September a British officer who was taken prisoner by the Germans a year before describes, under the title "From Cambrai to Würzburg," the treatment which the British wounded received on the journey from France to Germany:

"In the early days of September hospital wards (at Cambrai) were cleared wholesale, and the wounded, no matter what their conditions, were packed off in cattle trucks. Their uniforms, especially their great-coats, were taken from them; they were given no food on the journey, and in some cases were treated with great brutality."

The German officials at Wittenberg who steal prisoners' overcoats are, it will be perceived, following a precedent early established. The British officer from whose experiences we are quoting had been assured by the German doctor in charge of the Cambrai hospital that the journey to Germany would be made in the greatest comfort "in a special hospital train." The promise may have been an example of German humour. The special hospital train consisted of ordinary third-class corridor coaches packed with French and English soldiers. The officer himself, suffering from a wound in the head and still paralysed on one side, was accommodated with a wooden bed covered with straw. "Das ist schon für einen Engländer" was the comment of one of his guards with regard to the sick man's pallet. He was given some thin vegetable soup, stone cold. A racking headache, due to his wound, impelled him to beg for some aspirin. The only reply he got was: "Tell the Englishman not to smoke a cigar and he will not have a headache."

#### THE BAVARIAN MOB.

During the long and painful journey to Würzburg, the wounded, packed five in a carriage, were not even allowed to remain tranquil in their misery and discomfort. At Aschaffenburg on the Bavarian frontier "a curious-looking mob of men dressed in bits of all uniforms collected outside our carriage and proceeded to go through a pantomimic exhibition of hate. The leader of the mob was a half-drunken ruffian, who kept calling on us to come out and fight and threatening to come inside and cut our throats." It was not an isolated incident. "One group of these soldiers came in about five in the morning and behaved with great rudeness and brutality: The wounded men had by this time settled on the floor of the carriage all in a heap and had fallen off to sleep. . . . The sentry was telling our visitors that one of the Englishmen had been shot in the face and had been badly disfigured. Whereupon a German soldier pulled the poor fellow out of the sleeping mass on the floor and sat him upon a seat, the others standing round pointing at the poor mutilated face with coarse jeering laughter. The young Irish soldier sat patiently through it all—his blind eye was a running sore, the torn cheek in healing had left a hideously scarred hollow, and the nose and mouth were twisted to one side. His condition would have stirred pity in the heart of a savage, and yet these Germans laughed and jeered."

Some things stir one beyond their relative import to a burning indignation. That incident of the Irish soldier is one of them. But be sure it does not stand alone. There is plenty of evidence to show that at that time and afterwards a discriminatory savagery was practised towards British prisoners. It probably is practised surreptitiously still. The British officer while in the prison fortress at Würzburg, learned from the French orderlies that "the English soldiers went about like whipped dogs. Most of them were ill from want of food and warm clothing. Any excuse was seized upon to inflict harsh punishments

and the constant bullying which was permitted, if not actually ordered, by the officers in charge, made the men's life a perpetual torment."

#### DÜSSELDORF.

The evidence all points the same way. Private Palin, of the 2nd South Lancashire Regiment, who was paralysed by a bullet that struck him in the spine, was stripped by the Germans, and for two days after Mons lay helpless on the field. Some Belgians took him to a hospital, but he had the misfortune to be afterwards removed to Germany. After three months he was again moved from hospital to an ordinary prisoners' camp. "The British prisoners were the subjects of frequent insults from the Germans, who never tired of calling them 'swine' and 'beasts,' and when out for exercise their guards struck them in the ribs with the butts of their rifle. . . ." Capt. J. Hepper, R.A.M.C., who was released after ten months' detention, said in *The Liverpool Daily Post* (July 6, 1915) that the British prisoners were "not only made to endure extreme hardships, but insults were heaped on them at every turn. Every effort was made to break the spirit of the British and to make them feel the ignominy of their position." Capt. Hepper's experiences of the journey to Germany from the Belgian hospital were similar to those which already have been quoted. The journey from Liège to Düsseldorf took four days. There was no food, though in a few isolated cases a soldier could get a bite and a drink in exchange for his overcoat. There was the same stream of insult from the railway stations, where people crowded into the carriages and spat and jeered at our men. Capt. Hepper also says that in the early days the prisoners were half starved, but that there was an improvement about last March. He comments on an attempt by the Germans to foment a quarrel between the Russians and the British in camp. An incident similar in kind is described by the officer at Würzburg.

#### A FRENCH MAJOR'S EXPERIENCE.

Both these deponents agree that the prisoners of other nationalities were treated better than ours. Such discrimination was, however, not always exercised. In *The British Review* the story of a French military doctor, Aide-Major X., makes it quite clear that the German device of inducing the French prisoners, and especially the French officers, to believe that "it's the British we hate" was an afterthought, the product of some deliberate German policy to sow dissension between the Allies. It had not occurred to their minds early in the war; and the French wounded were treated with the same hateful callousness as others. Major X. and his ambulance had been installed at Fossé in the Ardennes, and had been left in charge of 200 French wounded when the French retired. He arranged his camp, gave strict orders to enforce calm and quietude, and conspicuously displaying the Red Cross awaited the arrival of the Germans. When they arrived they surrounded the village, and as soon as Major X. advanced, displaying the Red Cross, shot at him till he fell wounded in the leg. He was dragged to his feet, beaten with rifle butts, and threatened with execution. Several other things occurred which were a regular part of the German violations of the laws and decencies of warfare, of which German opinion was expressed in the rejoinder that "the Geneva Convention held good only in time of peace." Finally, however, Major X. and two orderlies were allowed to take away a hundred of the wounded to Stenay, where they were permitted, and compelled, to unload these wounded soldiers without assistance. Other French wounded arrived till they numbered 230, many of whom had to be laid (still without any help from the Germans) on the straw and manure of stables. There was no food; the water supply ran short on the third day. "The food question for several days was really agonising. Only a few amongst the wounded had received a little soup and



**“SUCCESSFUL OPERATION” BY GERMAN WARSHIPS.**

The bombardment of Scarborough by the German Fleet. An imaginative drawing from a German paper showing the apparent object of the attack—to slaughter and instill fear into the civilian inhabitants of an English seaside resort. The effect produced on women and children as here portrayed evidently affords satisfaction to the German mind.

a little coffee, but by far the greater number had nothing. All of them clamoured incessantly for something to eat. It was pitiable. To my repeated demands for sustenance the Germans invariably replied that they had none to give me." Some help was obtained through the devotion of a Belgian lady, who, notwithstanding threats and shots fired at her, smuggled in milk and other provisions for several days. Medical comforts were as hard to get as food. "Among my 280 wounded about 60 had wounds of a nature demanding instant attention. I had made out and communicated a list of these to the chief medical officer of the German 'feld lazaret' at Stenay. On the day following our arrival I had managed to get two officers transported to the hospital there. As for the other wounded, there was no place, or no time, it seemed, for them. In vain I begged and implored they would let me perform the operations, immediately necessary, myself. . . . It was only after the eighth day that my most severely wounded could be taken in at the hospital. But during the interval many had died, others were at their last gasp, and I do not think many survived."

#### A CONVOY OF WOUNDED.

That was the fate of the wounded at Stenay. Major X. had been forced to leave a hundred others wounded behind at Fossé under the charge of his two orderlies. Their fate continually troubled him. And with reason. Here is the letter he received from his orderlies: "We send you a man that he may receive your instructions with regard to the hundred wounded who were left with us at Fossé. Their condition, as you may imagine, is lamentable and cannot continue. Their groans never cease. We can neither nurse them nor feed them, as we are without doctors, medicine, or food. Their wounds are becoming septic, and in many cases gangrene has set in. . . . We see one die every day. Eight have gone since you left, and others are ready to follow." Major X. made desperate efforts to succour his poor soldiers, and he suffered in the process. Venturing out of barracks (with permission), he was set upon by a dozen German soldiers, who began to beat him with the butt end of their rifles on the pretext that he was trying to escape. . . . He had to submit to insults, to the menace of drunken soldiers. "On two different occasions they came and dragged me out of bed, in the middle of the night, placed me against the wall, and told me that I was then and there going to be shot. . . . Twice they left me for a good half-hour standing up against the wall, while they hurled filthy epithets at me, pointed their rifles at me, and at last took me back to my room." Finally, Major X. and his two orderlies were marched off as part of a convoy of prisoners. He was a wounded man; his orderlies were worn out. "I asked if we had to make a long march, as neither I nor my orderlies were physically capable of undergoing fatigue. I was told we had no great distance to go, and further that we had only to obey and follow. . . . We were marched off to Longuijon. This stage of thirty kilometres (nearly twenty miles) was simply torture. I was suffering excruciating pain from one of my wounds, and when we arrived at the station at Longuijon we were nearly all dead from exhaustion. . . . In the train journey of sixty hours to Ingolstadt. . . . at every halt the inhabitants, evidently advised of our arrival, appeared in numbers. They pelted us with opprobrious names, also with stones, which hurt more."

#### FRENCH OFFICIAL EVIDENCE.

There the story ends. There is, however, other and official evidence to show that the treatment of French prisoners was often stamped with German vileness. The Second French Report published in Paris last March records that in many of the camps some of the prisoners were almost dying of hunger. Punishment consisted, as a rule, in being tied by the neck to a post, both hands and feet being made fast; . . . it also generally involved missing rations. "In one of the camps a young man

who was almost dying of hunger begged to be given something to eat. He was beaten by a warder and then given six days' cells. At Darmstadt a corporal used to hit the prisoners over the head with his sword if they did not salute him. On another occasion he stabbed in the chest with his bayonet a soldier who said that men ought not to work without food. The man died next day. At Gustrow a man was struck with a bayonet because he stopped his work to light his pipe. Another was killed with a bayonet for having broken a pane of glass." The French Report comments on the insufficiency of food, the mortality among the prisoners from bronchitis and pneumonia, and the terrible condition of the majority of those who were exchanged when they reached the Swiss border.

The following are some extracts from a letter received from an officer who is a prisoner in Germany, and published in *The Westminster Gazette*, Nov. 16, 1915. The officer was wounded in the retreat from Mons by shrapnel, which struck him on the foot, and was captured by a German reserve regiment. "As I had my hands up," he says, "one of the Germans hit me across the back with his rifle."

#### A GLIMPSE OF BURNING LOUVAIN.

Eventually we were sent back under an escort of six Germans. After being interrogated by some staff officers (to whom I said I had forgotten everything) we continued our road towards Germany, passing on the way thousands of German troops and transports, being subjected all the time to insults and threats and jeers from the former. Our guards were very decent fellows, luckily, as otherwise we would have fared ill. Our first halting-place was in a cinema theatre about eight miles from Mons, where we found about 200 more prisoners. Here I found all our band, who had been stretcher-bearers and were captured in the hospitals. We slept on the floor, and next morning were given a piece of black bread and some water, and set off for H., where we stayed the night, receiving another small piece of bread and some water.

From there we marched to Louvain, passing across the field of Waterloo *en route*. When we got to Louvain a great part of the town was burning, and it was necessary to run past some blazing buildings in order to avoid falling débris. Not a civilian hardly was to be seen. One young girl we passed was made by our guards to hold her hands over her head. In every window was a solitary lighted candle, but nobody was to be seen. Here and there a street in flames. We saw the body of a man lying in front of a burning house. He was badly burnt and appeared to have jumped or been thrown out of the house. We passed the cathedral, a magnificent building, which was in flames, with the exception of the altar. The building opposite (the University) was also alight. It was terrible. We slept in the barracks that night, and all the time the flames lit up the sky and the smoke made it difficult to breathe.

#### INSULTED AT RAILWAY STATIONS.

Next morning a party of soldiers came in laden with loot (tobacco, brandy, &c.). After breakfast (of which there was none), we went to the station, where we had to stand perfectly still for two hours or more until our train was ready. Not even being allowed to turn our heads (literally). All this time civilians, men, women, and children, nuns and monks, were being driven in hordes to the station to be taken away. Every one with hands above their heads, from little children of four or five years to old men of 80 in wheelbarrows. A German told us they were going to shell the town at one o'clock. Eventually we were put into the train, and at 12.30 heard the guns start. The carriage I was in was a truck about thirty feet long by six or eight wide. Horses had been in there, and the manure had been roughly swept up into a corner, on which some of us were made to sit down. There were about 20 to 30 men in there. We were not allowed even to stand up. The train stopped many times on the way,

# GERMAN WAR MEDALS.



COUNT ZEPPELIN.  
By Fr. Eue.



THE ZEPPELIN RAID ON LONDON, SEPT. 17-18, 1915.



THE ALLIED POWERS (THE ALLIANCE OF SPITE).

The six heads are : a cock for France, a lion for Belgium, another lion for England (?), a bear for Russia, a serpent and an ape for Japan. Beneath is Italy as a babe sucking what profit it can.



THE "GOOD OLD GERMAN GOD" WITH THE WORDS

"Smite him dead. The day of judgment does not ask you for your reasons."

\* Reproduced from specimens in the Victoria and Albert Museum.

# GERMAN WAR MEDALS.



ZEPPELIN FEATS.

Count Zeppelin and the Zeppelin successes have not been omitted from the list of honours. The Count is shown on one side of a medal, and on the other a huge airship dropping bombs and heavily attacking a fortified town—with the inscription "Our Zeppelin in action in the Campaign of 1914." The only weakness in the design is the fortified town. A tribute paid to the "bombardment of English fortresses by Zeppelins" on the East Coast refers presumably to Sandringham and Southend.



SEA AND LAND VICTORIES \*

Since the beginning of the war the well-known German medalists have been kept busy perpetuating, in bronze, silver, and even gold, the leading events of the world war from the Teutonic point of view. The fall of Liège, Namur, Brussels, Louvain, Tirlemont, Ostend, Dixmude, Ypres, and Nieuport are all commemorated. Perhaps the most striking success thus celebrated is the attack made by German ships on Scarborough and Hartlepool. The obverse and reverse of this medal calling for God's blessing on the Germanic Allies are shown here.

*Reproduced by permission of Sir Whitworth Wallis and the proprietors of the "Strand Magazine."*

and we were shown off to the people, who crowded to the sides of the line, greeting us with cries of "Englander Schweinhunde," and making insulting gestures. At stations the soldiers came often to look at us, spitting on us through the windows. We started in the train on the Thursday and continued until 1.30 a.m. Saturday morning without being allowed to get out.

#### EXPOSURE AND HUNGER.

On Friday we were given some coffee and a piece of bread. From Tuesday to Saturday we received three pieces of bread from the Germans and nothing to drink but water, having to march the Wednesday (Halle to Louvain) about thirty-two miles. On this day at a village named La Hulpe the Belgians gave us something to eat.

Saturday morning at 1.30 a.m. we arrived at S. and slept on the ground in the open until 7 o'clock, when we had a bath and breakfast, of which we were badly in need.

For a few days we were in barracks, but when more prisoners began to arrive we were put into an open field, and lived there for over a week, many without blankets, exposed in the day to the burning sun, at night to the torrents of rain which came pouring down. We got wet through at night and dried ourselves in the day (when it was fine). After a while we were put in tents with straw to sleep on. This soon became full of lice, and we were in an awful state from dirt and lack of food. Every opportunity of insulting and bullying us was taken advantage of by the guards. During the winter it was terrible. For punishment the men were tied to trees for a couple of hours. Most of them had no overcoats. Everything was taken from us when we were captured. There were 500 in each tent. Very crowded and no light.

#### PRISONERS' FARE.

On December 12th we were moved to another camp and put in huts (wooden). This was much better and warmer. The ground was in an awful state. Our meals here consist of about  $\frac{3}{4}$  lb. potato bread in a day (which is awful stuff), coffee for breakfast (made mostly of roasted barley), soup for dinner, which is mostly bad and sometimes worse, being often made with rotten meat, and sometimes coffee, sometimes soup (?) for supper. If it wasn't for the parcels we would be starved by now, as it is it is really slow starvation. Luckily we have a jolly good commandant, Herr —, who is a thorough gentleman, strict but just. He makes things as easy for us as possible. The men do fatigue out of camp every day except Sunday. Wet or fine they have to go out. Reveille is at four o'clock, parade at 5.30. Myself, I do nothing on account of my foot. I study French or read most of the day. When I went to B about my foot I went by tram. The sentry told me to sit down, but a German officer coming in made me stand up and give my seat to a German corporal, saying that an Englander must not sit down amongst Germans. I must hurry. Someone is waiting for this. . . . Publish as much as you like ; it might interest people at home."

The following extracts are from a good-humoured diary written by the Rev. B. G. O'Rorke, Chaplain to the Forces. They describe the attitude of the German populace at points on the journey :

#### ESSEN.

"At Essen I was permitted to visit one of our wounded men who was dying of tetanus. The unfortunate patients lay in rows on the floor of luggage vans, with straw beneath them. When the train stopped at a station the doors of these vans were sometimes flung open in order that the crowd might have a look at them.

#### AACHEN.

"At Aachen a hostile demonstration took place at our expense. There happened to be a German troop train in the station at the time. A soldier of our escort displayed

a specimen of the British soldier's knife, holding it up with the marline-spike open, and declared that this was the deadly instrument which British medical officers had been using to gouge out the eyes of the wounded Germans who had fallen into their vindictive hands! From the knife he pointed to the medical officers sitting placidly in the train, as much as to say : "And these are some of the culprits." This was too much for the German soldiers. They strained like bloodhounds on the leash. "Out with them!" said their irate colonel, pointing with his thumb over his shoulder to the carriages in which these blood-thirsty British officers sat. The colonel, however, did not wait to see his behest carried out, and a very gentlemanly German subaltern quietly urged his men to get back to their train and leave us alone. The only daggers that pierced us were the eyes of a couple of priests, a few women and boys, who appeared to be shocked beyond words that even a clergyman was amongst such wicked men. The enormity of the crimes which had necessitated my capture I could only conjecture from their looks.

#### TORGAU.

"At Torgau the townsfolk evidently had heard that we were coming, and they were at the station gates in scores to show us how pleased they were to welcome us to their town. In fact, they told us quite freely what they thought of us and the nation which we represented. They walked beside us every inch of the way, keeping up our spirits by telling us the particular kind of *Schweinhunds* they believed the *Englander* to be. Not until they had crossed the massive bridge which spans the Elbe and reached the Bruckenkopf Fortress did they turn back home, and the doors of the fortress closed behind us."

## RUSSIAN PRISONERS AND CAPTIVES.

#### RUSSIAN OFFICIAL INQUIRY.

Whatever mitigation of the treatment of Russian prisoners in Germany may have now been secured by the Russian Government's threat of "similar treatment" to German prisoners in Russian hands, the behaviour of the Germans to their captives on the East Prussian front and the Mazura Lakes region at the beginning of the war was of the same kind as that experienced by British, French, and Belgians in the West.

#### ILL-TREATMENT ON THE JOURNEY.

Russians made prisoners were generally deprived of their overcoats, boots, and everything else of any value by German soldiers, and even by German officers. They were sent on foot to the nearest railway station. The slightly wounded had to walk. During such marches no food was given them. They had to eat raw potatoes, turnips, and carrots which they tore up in the fields along the route, and for getting these vegetables they were beaten and ill-used by the Germans of the escort. The senior subaltern of the 21st Siberian regiment—Raphael Kochurovsky—witnessed the shooting of a wounded Russian prisoner by a German soldier for leaving the ranks to pick up a half-rotten turnip lying in the road.

The peaceful inhabitants along the routes traversed in Germany showed the greatest hostility towards the prisoners, whom they reviled as "Russian swine and dogs." Women, and even children, threw stones at them and spat in their faces. At Allenstein the crowd struck the wounded men, pulled their moustaches, and spat in their faces. Entrained, they were conveyed in cattle-trucks with dirty, stinking floors, with a thick layer of dung. The normal load per truck was 80 to 90 men. The trucks were so overcrowded that it was impossible to sit or lie down. Before the train started the trucks were tightly closed and the prisoners had to obey the



calls of Nature where they stood, using their caps for the purpose and throwing them out afterwards through the small window, which also served as the only means of ventilation.

#### THE STIFLING CATTLE TRUCKS.

The atmosphere in the trucks, as all the prisoners who have returned home declare, was frightful. Men were half suffocated; they fainted away and many even died. Hunger was their constant companion. A mug of bad barley coffee and a small piece of bread in the course of two or three days—this was all the prisoners had to satisfy their appetites. The pangs of hunger were only intensified, instead of being appeased, when the train stopped and the trucks were opened to exhibit the prisoners to the public at the stations, where victualling arrangements existed for the German soldiers. The latter were then regaled with abundance of food and drink before the very eyes of the famished Russians looking out of the trucks.

#### RECEPTION BY THE GERMAN PEOPLE.

Vasili Tretiakov, a private in his Majesty's 3rd Life Guard regiment of riflemen, has related a case which it would be difficult to believe were it not told by an eye-witness. At one of the stations the truck was opened in which Tretiakov and 80 or 90 men altogether were being conveyed into the interior of Germany. Having received no food for two days, the Russian prisoners, who fully expected to get some bread at this station, were gazing with hungry and longing looks into the distance, when they saw women dressed as Sisters of Mercy distributing bread and sausages to the German soldiers. One of these sisters went up to the truck in which Tretiakov was standing, and a Russian soldier at the door stretched out his hand for something to eat, but the woman simply struck it and smeared the soldier's face with a piece of sausage. She then called all the prisoners "Russian swine," and went away from the side of the train.

#### CRUELTY AND ROBBERY.

The extent to which the Germans have cultivated the art and means of cruel mockery may be seen in an incident of which Nicholas Eichem, a soldier of the Life Guard regiment of Keksholm was a spectator. At Neidenburg the Germans harnessed a Russian officer to a machine gun and made him drag it through the streets of the town accompanied by the jeers and jibes of the inhabitants.

On August 28th, during the fighting in the region of the Mazura Lakes, in East Prussia, the Germans captured about 300 Russian soldiers, including Gabriel Piskunov, a junior subaltern, and privates Ivan Abramov and Kozma Nazarov. All the prisoners were first of all searched and relieved of their money and everything else of any value. Then the Germans picked out all the Russians who were distinguished by wearing medals and crosses, and shot them dead on the spot. The rest were made to tramp to Letzen. Those who lagged behind were goaded on with the butt ends of rifles, and when some fell down quite exhausted the men of the German escort despatched them at the point of the bayonet. Along the road they were reviled by the natives, who also pelted them with stones and sticks, and German cavalymen in passing by stabbed them with their lances without the least cause or reason. In this way the prisoners were forced to march the whole day without food or drink. In the evening they reached Letzen, and were entrained in goods wagons or trucks, which had just been evacuated by horses; 80 or 90 men were crowded into each truck, with closely-shut doors, and thus they were conveyed to Stendal. The journey took two days, and all that time the prisoners were not once let out of the trucks, or allowed to taste even the usual thin black coffee. At Stendal they were taken to a concentration camp, in which about 10,000 men were interned. According to

the accounts given by the prisoners, the life there was frightful. They were so badly fed that many died of ill-nourishment and exhaustion, while the strongest men among them became so feeble that they might have been knocked down by a child. The German sentries treated the captives with the utmost rigour and cruelty. For the slightest mistake or offence they were beaten with the butt ends of rifles, tied up to a post for several hours at a time, and attacked by watch dogs.

The three witnesses escaped on May 31st, and on June 29th managed to cross the frontier into Holland, where they were well treated, and sent to London. Thence they travelled back to Russia.

#### HOW THE WOUNDED FARED.

Joseph Dashkevich, a soldier in the Life Guard regiment of Keksholm, was picked up by German stretcher-bearers on the third day after a battle near Lodz and taken, together with three other wounded Russians, to the nearest farmhouse. They were put into a stable with the cattle, thrown down on to the dung, and in spite of their entreaties to have their wounds bandaged, so as to keep them clean, the German sanitary officers went away, leaving the wounded Russians without any medical assistance or attendance. The cattle shed in which the wounded men were lodged took fire from an artillery shell. The Germans leisurely led out the cattle and brought out things of no value, but only when the fire had spread very considerably did they proceed to drag Dashkevich and another of the wounded Russians out of the flaming building. The two others remained inside and were burnt alive.

#### TREATMENT OF OFFICERS.

Colonel Michael Saveliev, of the 4th regiment of riflemen, was wounded by a rifle bullet, and twice contused in the fighting on the 14th of August, 1914, near Soldau. The Germans took him prisoner and deposited him on the estate "Rutkovits." There was a luxurious mansion on this estate, in which wounded German soldiers were accommodated. Although there were several empty rooms in this house, they put the wounded Russian colonel in a small room or cellar in the basement, with one little window and a floor covered with dirt, broken glass and different kinds of rubbish. In the same room 2 more wounded Russian officers were placed and also 6 wounded privates. When they arrived at Rutkovits no food was given to the wounded; only a small wooden bowl with water was left with them for the night. The room contained a bedstead and one small sofa. The soldiers with undressed wounds had to lie on the dirty floor, the bed and couch being given to the wounded officers. Colonel Saveliev spent the night sitting on the edge of the couch. Next day the prisoners were three times interrogated as to the strength of the Russian forces and their strategical disposition. A doctor's assistant made his appearance to see to the wounds of the prisoners in the evening. His sanitary attendant stood with a loaded revolver pointed at each wounded man as his wound was hastily dressed.

#### THE NEGLECTED WOUNDED PRISONERS.

The following is an instance from last year's campaign: "On the 3rd of February, 1915, Egor Stroikov, senior subaltern of an infantry regiment, was wounded in the left leg at a battle near the village of 'Dalny Lyes,' in the Augustin Forest, and taken to one of the houses in that village to have his wound dressed. The Russian troops, however, were soon obliged to beat a hasty retreat, and Stroikov, together with 11 other severely wounded Russians, fell into the hands of the Germans. When the latter arrived on the scene they simply counted and registered the wounded, and then left them without any further attention. For two days these prisoners received neither food nor medical relief. Their wounds began to suppurate, and the bandages were getting wet. When

they begged for bread the German soldiers and officers replied, 'We've got no bread for you,' and when they asked to have their wounds dressed they were told to go to an ambulance station, which was over a mile away from the village, and there was no possibility of the wounded men reaching this point without assistance.

"The third day the wounded were ordered to move into an adjoining room, as in the one in which they were staying the Russian doctors had performed operations. No help, however, was given to the wounded to make this removal, and they were only able to carry out the orders of the Germans, thanks to the Polish landlord of the house, who brought a plank, on which he dragged each of the wounded Russians from one room to the other. Throughout the following days these wounded men continued to remain without food, and they underwent great suffering from their inflamed and festering wounds. Sometimes they bought a little bread with the help of the Polish landlord, and two of them, who were not so badly wounded as the others, managed to go out into the village and bring back a few raw potatoes. On one occasion a German officer called upon them, and when Stroikov asked him for assistance he answered in broken Russian, 'You will get nothing!' and spat in Stroikov's face. This treatment lasted 22 days, until the Russian troops returned and released the captives. By that time two of them had died."

## RUSSIAN EXPERIENCES OF GERMAN PRISON CAMPS.

Whatever may have been suspected of the condition of the prisoners' camps in Germany from reports received from British or French prisoners who have been fortunate enough to return from them, is corroborated and amplified by the evidence examined before the Russian Inquiry. Russian prisoners were chiefly distributed in the camps at Altgrabow, Brandenburg, Stralsund, Ulm, Wezel, and Schneidemühle. These camps at the outset had no buildings of any kind. The prisoners who had been robbed of their overcoats and boots had to pass days and nights under the open sky and lying on the bare ground. They made themselves dug-outs with their metal spoons and tin mugs. Finally, however, they got into barracks or buildings and received mattresses stuffed with wood shavings. These rotted.

There were no baths in the camps. The prisoners were obliged to remain clothed in the dirty shirts which they wore when they were captured, and being therefore unable to wash themselves, or their linen, they were terribly tormented by insects. When the winter weather set in their mattresses were frozen hard to the ground and their drinking water was converted into lumps of ice. They only saved themselves from being frozen by huddling close together, often one on the top of the other, in order to keep each other warm by the heat of their bodies. Hands and feet were frozen in a number of cases.

### A CONCENTRATION CAMP IN 1914.

A peasant named Peter Yakovlev Shimchak, belonging to the first category of army reserves, was in Denmark when war was declared, and whilst going over to England, in the early part of August, 1914, on board an English sailing vessel, he was taken prisoner by the Germans, and at first placed in solitary confinement, in a gaol at Hamburg. Subsequently he was removed to a concentration camp near Berlin, called "Zelle-Lager," occupied by Russian, French, English, and Belgian prisoners. The accommodation consisted of sheds constructed of deal planks, without stoves or flooring. There were no beds or bedsteads, and the prisoners had to sleep on the bare ground, littered with finely chopped straw. The consequence was that the men sometimes had their hands and feet frozen. With regard to food, they received in the morning black coffee without sugar or bread; for dinner

they had soup made out of seakale and a quarter of a pound of bread, and the same quantity of bread for supper.

Notwithstanding this scanty amount of nourishment, the prisoners were not infrequently put to very hard and sometimes extremely tiring work. For instance, they were made to drag carts, and they were also harnessed to ploughs together with the cattle. For the slightest disobedience or deviation from the usual order of things they were knocked about with the butt ends of rifles, or thrashed with sticks of gutta-percha, which were supplied to all the sentries, and some of them were tightly bound with rope to a post and left in that position for a couple of hours. After this punishment their arms and legs were so benumbed that it sometimes took two and three hours for them to recover. As a refinement of cruelty they were forced to kneel on broken pieces of brick for about a couple of hours, with only short intervals of relief, so that their knees were cut and sore. The sentries would not allow them to kneel on the flat and smooth pieces of brick, but kept them to the sharp and rough bits.

The business of supplying food was entrusted to contractors, and it is no marvel that the German contractor should have fattened while the Russian prisoner starved. The rations of insufficient bread, a greyish brown liquid called coffee, soup without meat, dirty vegetables, and a gruel of bran, have often been described. These conditions of bad nourishment, added to the cold and damp and want of sanitation, produced epidemic cholera and typhus. At Schneidemühle (28,000 prisoners) typhus broke out in the middle of November. At the end of the month the disease became so serious that about 40 Russian prisoner doctors were sent to the camp to battle with it. On their arrival the commandant delivered to them a little lecture in which he pointed out that Germany was not Russia, and that for those who were unwilling to work in Germany there were means of compulsion. He emphasized his remarks by pointing to his revolver and pulling a whip out of one of his top boots.

## THE TYPHUS OUTBREAK AT SCHNEIDEMÜHLE.

It is difficult to describe the state of things which the Russian doctors met with in the camp at Schneidemühle.

Men down-stricken with typhus, in a more or less serious form, were prostrate on the ground of the barracks, side by side with their healthy companions. They were lying on wet and rotten mattresses. There was no medical attendance, and the healthy men, as well as the invalids who could still stand on their legs, were looking after those who were too weak to get up. All the clothing they had on were the coarse tunics worn by soldiers in hot weather instead of shirts, and their drawers, while the thin blankets on the beds scarcely covered them. The barracks were ventilated in the most primitive manner. The windows and doors were all thrown wide open several times a day, and the cold draught blowing through the buildings gave shivers even to the men who were quite well, whilst those who were delirious, with 40 degrees Réaumur of body temperature, might as well have had icy cold water poured over them. No changes were made for giving better nourishment to the sick men. They were fed out of the common pot, with the same kind of soup and the same "boltushka," or mess of thin sticky gruel. The sick patients were weakened by parasites and vermin.

### BRUTALITY TO THE PATIENTS.

In such conditions it became more difficult every day to fight against the epidemic; nevertheless, the military authorities of the camp remained deaf to all requests made by the Russian medical staff. At last, however, the enormous percentage of deaths compelled the German authorities to turn their attention to the state of the camp. A sanitary inspector was sent to make an investigation, and the Russian doctors gave him a written report indi-

cating the measures, which, in their opinion, were necessary at once in order to combat the epidemic with success. This report had an effect. A bath house was rapidly constructed, clean under-linen for the men was sent to the camp, and the sick men were separated from the healthy prisoners and lodged in separate barracks.

But even when these necessary measures were taken, and which were not so much directed towards diminishing the sufferings of the sick prisoners, as they were intended to prevent the spread of the epidemic beyond the bounds of the camp, the cruelty of the German towards a defenceless enemy still showed itself.

The new barracks were disinfected against parasites, and the sick men, before being transferred, were washed in the bath, shaved and besmeared with insecticide ointment, but they were then made to go naked into the new premises and there they only received clean linen.

In spite of the measures adopted, the epidemic of typhus at the concentration camp of Schneidemühle did not and could not cease, as nothing was done to remove the primary causes of the disease, namely, hunger and exhaustion of the prisoners.

#### 4,000 DEATHS.

The number of patients increased and those who survived were obliged to give up their places in the barracks of the lazaretto to fresh victims. As there was not sufficient accommodation for convalescents, the latter, who were still dangerous in the sense of spreading possible contagion, were isolated in special subterranean huts, or "dug-outs," each intended for 250 or 300 men.

The weak invalids, who were in a semi-conscious state, in spite of a protest from the Russian doctors, were cruelly transferred from the barracks to the "dug-outs," and many of them never came out of them alive. Besides those who were taken thence to the cemetery, others were carried to the operation tables.

These underground huts were dug out in a hurry; boards were used only to cover over the top, and their unsupported walls subsided and often covered the patients lying against them with sand and soil. The isolated patients, to whom access was forbidden, were left in the "dug-outs" without any attendance, and even food was not given to them every day. The cold was felt here still more keenly, as straw only, instead of mattresses, was provided in the "dug-outs," and the sick men, having no thick clothing, tried to keep warm by getting underneath the straw.

Very few survived this torture, and during the course of two months more than 4,000 men died. The freezing of arms and legs became almost a normal occurrence, and the gangrene which then set in necessitated amputation.

Amongst the 248 Russian prisoners in the first batch returned from Germany many are without their limbs, and it must be understood that these men have not been crippled as the result of wounds received on the field of battle. Not bullets nor fragments of exploding shells, but the malice and cruelty of the Germans towards a detested enemy have made many soldiers cripples for life.

#### FORCED LABOUR AND SEVERITY.

The Germans have made wide use of the compulsory and unpaid labour of their prisoners of war. The hardest and dirtiest work was given to the Russian and the English prisoners. The French were treated more considerately.

The prisoners were set in parties of a hundred at a time to dig canals, hew down timber, carry logs and dig trenches. The hardest work was that of draining swamps and tilling and harrowing the fields. From 6 o'clock in the morning till 8 o'clock at night prisoners had to work, standing bare-footed in water up to the knees, in digging canals for the drainage of marshy soil. . . . In tilling the fields they were harnessed in batches to ploughs and harrows, thus taking the place of cattle, and being treated like cattle. If they sat down to rest they were driven back by a whip or the butt end of a German soldier's rifle. Any prisoner who refused to work was beaten senseless. Jacob

Kalichkin, 27th regiment Siberian riflemen, was a spectator of the way in which a whole party of Russian prisoners were beaten, and ten of them beaten to death, for refusing to dig trenches in front of Kalisch.

#### DISCIPLINARY PUNISHMENTS.

In addition to the beatings very frequently inflicted with the whips with which the German sergeants, subalterns, and soldiers holding sway in the camps were abundantly furnished, there were a number of cruel and humiliating "disciplinary punishments." Prisoners were kept on bread and water, they were made to stand with uplifted arms, they were made to kneel with bare knees on broken bricks, to drag heavy loads round the barracks until they were thoroughly exhausted and so forth. For the most part the forms of punishment favoured by the Germans remind one of the tortures of the middle ages.

Offenders were tied up high with ropes or wire to posts, so that their feet barely touched the ground, and in this position they were left for 3 or 4 hours. In 20—25 minutes the blood began to rise to the head, copious hæmorrhage took place from the nose, mouth, and ears, the unfortunate man gradually grew weak, lost consciousness, and was only prevented from falling down by the ropes or wires which held him to the post.

According to the evidence of prisoners who underwent that kind of torture, it was frightful. The rope and wire cut into the body, causing unbearable suffering and for a long time after being liberated the victim was "unable to come to himself." All the body ached and a general weakness rendered any movement impossible.

Not infrequently prisoners were stretched over a barrel and beaten with sticks and whips with thongs of gut until they completely lost consciousness.

There is another form of punishment, invented by cultured Germans, which does not, at first sight, appear to be very dreadful, but which those who had the misfortune to experience it declare is in the highest degree painful. The men to be punished were led out on to an open space, placed back to back, and in this position they were tightly bound together, the rope enveloping the body from head to foot. The men thus lashed together were left standing until one of them fainted away and pulled down the other.

These disciplinary punishments were inflicted at the discretion of German sergeant-majors, under-officers, and even private soldiers, who were apparently given uncontrolled power over the honour, health, and lives of the prisoners.

#### EXECUTIONS.

On the night of May 7th, 1915, in the camp of Wittenberg, seven Russian prisoners were shot for applying to the commandant with a request for better food. This execution was carried out in the presence of Serge Demin, a private in the Grenadier regiment of Kiev.

In the camp at Schneidemühle, where there were 12 degrees of frost, a German officer, who was making an inspection, ordered the prisoners to come out of their barracks dressed only in their shirts, without the bed covers, which served them instead of the overcoats taken away from them when they were captured. One of the Russian prisoners, not waiting till the inspection was quite finished, ran off to get into his barrack out of the cold, but the inspecting officer sent a revolver bullet after him and killed him on the spot.

When the news of the defeat of the German troops at Warsaw spread through the camp at Schneidemühle it caused a pleasant animation amongst the Russian prisoners. The Germans being annoyed at the reverse, made the prisoners strip naked and kept them in the frost for several hours whilst they jeered at them and thus revenged themselves for failure at the front. This cruel case, which one would rather not believe, is vouched for by Semen Yashenin, a private of the 291st Trubchevsky regiment, who was one of the victims.

## BRUTALITY IN THE CAMPS.

A terrible case of cruel mockery of a defenceless enemy is related by Private Paul Kreshchenko-Kravchenko. One of the Russian prisoners, a Georgian by origin, tried to escape, but was caught and brought back to the camp. The Germans fastened a chain round his neck and drove him into a dog kennel, where he could neither sit nor lie down. Each time the guards were relieved the fresh soldier placed on duty at this post dragged the unfortunate Russian out of the kennel by the chain, struck him several blows and then drove him back. This torture lasted for two weeks.

Acts of cruelty, extending to causeless murder, were quite common occurrences in the concentration camps.

The camp at Schneidemühle was divided into four sections, and it was forbidden to pass from one section to another. Conversation between prisoners interned in different sections was also forbidden. For not observing this rule one of the Russian prisoners was killed by a German sentinel in the presence of Vasilii Stemberg, a private in the 255th regiment of Akkerman, who has related this disgusting case.

Private Artemius Shneir, of the 22nd regiment of Nijni-Novgorod, relates that one of the men from his own regiment was tied up to a post every day for two weeks, because in one of his letters addressed to Russia he described the hard fate of prisoners in Germany.

## SHOT FOR DISOBEDIENCE.

One of the Russian prisoners picked up a rotten mangelwurzel, which had been thrown away near the camp fence, and began to eat it, contrary to the orders of a sentinel, who at once shot the offending prisoner dead on the spot. The dead body was put into a coffin and deposited in the centre of the camp, with the inscription in Russian: "Shot for disobedience to a sentinel." For the further edification of the prisoners they were brought out of the barracks and made to walk for two hours round the coffin containing the corpse. Besides other evidence of this fact, it has been attested by private Alexander Kuznetsoff of the 218th Gorbатовsky regiment.

The senior under-officer of the 87th infantry regiment, Prul Samsonov, has told how he saw a German sentinel in the camp of "Frederichsfeld" kill a Russian prisoner with two shots from his rifle, because the Russian went into another part of the camp and asked a French prisoner for a piece of bread.

One of the Russian prisoners who was very hungry, took a few raw potatoes from a load and began to eat them. This was observed by a German sentinel, who stabbed the prisoner in question in the side and he died the next day. This was witnessed by Fedor Vostriakov of the 208th Loreisky regiment.

Napoleon Yadvershis, a private in the 107th Molodenchensky regiment, certifies that in Schneidemühle 70 Russian prisoners, working in the kitchen of the camp, were stretched out in turns over a barrel and severely beaten with sticks because one of them gave a piece of meat to a Russian prisoner.

There is much more evidence; and in a letter in our possession a returned British prisoner was moved to pity their lot as worse in some instances than that of the British. He saw, he says, a great deal of the very harsh treatment of the Russian prisoners of war. "Firstly, they are insufficiently fed—practically starving. They walk about the English and French lines (that is if there are no Germans about) asking for food; and if we are caught giving them food our men are sent to prison; the Germans chase them about worse than dogs. . . . They are made to work making a canal for 30 pfennigs (threepence) a day. But they cannot buy food with that, only tobacco; and if the men refuse to work they are marched round the camp square with bags loaded with sand on their shoulders till they are exhausted. But they grin and bear it."

## THE TYPHUS EPIDEMIC AT WITTENBERG.

The conditions obtaining at Wittenberg Camp during the typhus epidemic of 1915 have been embodied in a Report issued by the Government Committee, with Mr. Robert Younger, K.C., as chairman, in April, 1916.

Major Priestley, R.A.M.C., Captain Vidal, R.A.M.C., and Captain Lauder, R.A.M.C., who have been permitted to return to this country, are the only survivors of the six sent by the German Government to take up at this camp the place of duty abandoned by their own medical staff.

## OVER-CROWDING.

The camp at Wittenberg is built on a flat, sandy plain, devoid of trees or shrubs. The total area of the camp is about 10½ acres, and is subdivided into eight companies or compounds, intended to be separated from each other, but not so in practice. Every compound contains on an average six wooden bungalows, in which the men are housed, each bungalow in turn being divided into two compartments or barracks, originally constructed, it is believed, to accommodate 120 men. In fact, however, there were frequently, before and during the epidemic, 180 to 200 prisoners in a barrack, so that the overcrowding was most serious. In the early stages of the war and during the fever the camp was very full. The British prisoners numbered between 700 and 800. There was a much larger number of French and Belgians, but the Russians always greatly preponderated over all the others. It is believed that before and during the progress of the typhus there were at least 15,000 prisoners in the camp, and there may have been as many as 16,000 or 17,000—an enormous population for so restricted an area as 10½ acres. The winter of 1914-15 was extremely severe and the cold at Wittenberg intense, but the heating arrangements for the camp were altogether inadequate. Although there were two stoves to each bungalow, frequently during the winter there was a great shortage of fuel, while the stoves were so constructed that it was only if they were both constantly stoked with all the coal they could possibly hold that a bungalow was reasonably warmed. Often there was no coal for either stove, and the temperature was so low that the men had always to keep every window shut to husband what little warmth there was, and this greatly aggravated the evil of the overcrowding.

## BAD MEDICAL AND SURGICAL ARRANGEMENTS.

The medical and surgical arrangements were under the charge of Oberstabsarzt Dr. Aschenbach and his German assistants. At the outbreak of the epidemic there were no British medical officers at Wittenberg. There were a number of Russian and there may have been some French doctors; of this the Committee are not certain. The arrival of the British medical officers at the camp came about in the following way. From the month of November, 1914, 13 English doctors had been detained at Halle. They were none of them required for attendance upon their own men, and it is difficult to understand how, consistently with the Geneva Convention, their continued detention was justifiable. Indeed, in direct defiance of the provisions of that Convention, these doctors were treated as ordinary prisoners of war, and the Committee cannot resist the suspicion that they were deliberately detained by the German authorities so that they might be made available, if need be, for work of danger in relief of their own staff. Be that as it may, after three months' wrongful detention, these doctors were, on February 10th, 1915, informed that they were to be distributed among the other German camps, and particularly that 6 were required for the camp at Wittenberg. By arrangement amongst themselves the 6 sent there were Major Fry, Major Priestley, Captain Sutcliffe, Captain Field, Captain Vidal, and Captain—then Lieutenant—Lauder. No reason was

given for the order that they should go to Wittenberg, and it was from the guard on the train that they first heard of typhus there. On arrival at Wittenberg they were marched to the camp. They visited the different compounds. They were received in apathetic silence. The rooms were unlighted; the men were aimlessly marching up and down; some were lying on the floor, probably sickening for typhus. When they got into the open air again Major Fry broke down. The horror of it all was more than he could for the moment bear.

#### INSANITARY CONDITIONS.

The epidemic broke out in December, 1914. Thereupon the German staff, military and medical, precipitately left the camp, and thenceforth until the month of August, 1915, with the exceptions detailed later on, no communication was held between the prisoners and their guards except by means of directions shouted from the guards or officers remaining outside the wire entanglements of the camp. All supplies for the men were pushed into the camp over chutes. The food for the hospital and medical officers was passed in on a trolley over about 20 yards of rail, worked by winches at either end, so as to avoid all contact between the prisoners and the outside world. No medical attention during the whole time was provided by the German staff. And the spread of the typhus, when it came, was much facilitated by a camp regulation, not confined to Wittenberg, which enjoined that prisoners of all nationalities should be mixed together. Normally, there was only one mattress for every three prisoners, and every British prisoner was compelled to have one French and one Russian prisoner to share his mattress with him. And the German authorities, although they were not ignorant of the danger, did nothing to prevent or minimise the spread of infection. That they knew it might become general throughout the camp is undoubted. German non-commissioned officers warned the French, shortly before the outbreak, of the risk, and, when during the course of the typhus, Captain Vidal, in order that its spread might be restricted as much as possible, asked a German officer, himself standing safely outside the camp, if the remaining healthy English could be placed together in one compound, his request was insultingly refused. Of the four officers left on February 11th at the camp itself, Captain Lauder alone survives, and the conditions as he describes them during the period between February 11th and March 7th are full of horror. The wonder is that any prisoner escaped infection.

#### INSUFFICIENT CLOTHING AND FOOD.

When Major Priestley arrived at Wittenberg Camp the allowance of bread was 1 kilog. loaf for ten men. Breakfast for the men, he says, consisted of black (acorn ?) coffee and bread. The bread contained a high percentage of potato and was most unpalatable. Sometimes a thin soup was given for breakfast in place of coffee. The mid-day meal consisted of a soup made of potato flour, horse-beans, soja flour, some form of grease, and a minimum of meat. Men would go days without finding any meat in their bowl. Sometimes the midday soup contained a powerfully smelling sun-dried fish, at other times dried plums, &c. In the evening there was more thin soup containing margarine. Before the outbreak there was a men's canteen at which bread and some other articles could be bought, but this was closed with the departure of the German guards on the outbreak of the typhus, and was not reopened until after their return when the epidemic was over. Then the camp food improved, but since the month of May the English had become largely independent of it, for from that time they mainly subsisted on parcels sent them from home. No parcels, however, reached the camp until May, and the German food previously supplied was, apart from its bad quality, quite insufficient to maintain vitality or enable an ordinary man to resist disease.

#### GHASTLY CONDITION OF THE CAMP.

During the first month the food ration for each patient was half a petit pain and half a cup of milk each per day. The only soup to be got was from the camp kitchen, but that came up in a wooden tub without a cover, and it arrived at the hospital—so one of the prisoners says—full of dust and dirt. It was hopeless diet for patients in a fever. In truth, the ration was not a ration at all; it was a pretence. It was not even possible to give the patients warm water with their milk. The camp conditions were too much for each of the four medical officers who were left there; two of them, Major Fry and Captain Sutcliffe, very soon sickened, and they died of typhus about a month after their arrival. Captain Field was attacked later by the disease and also died. There is no doubt that the condition to which the camp authorities had reduced the camp and the prisoners they had abandoned was directly responsible for the deaths of these devoted men. Lieutenant Lauder was finally stricken with the disease on March 7th, after having for three days, with a temperature due to typhus, stuck to his work, there being no one then to take his place. He alone of the officers attacked finally recovered. When convalescent he bravely resumed his duty. There were then about 1,000 cases of typhus in the camp, and fresh cases were coming in at the rate of about 50, and sometimes more, a day. There were at that time about 150 British cases.

The British sick were lying scattered amongst the French and the Russians, both in the compound No. 8 and in the other compounds of the camp. Being sometimes dressed in French, Belgian, or Russian uniforms, they were difficult to recognise. They were lying in their clothes on the floor, or on the straw mattresses above described. In the beginning there were no beds in compound No. 8; there were not even, as has been shown, mattresses for all. Major Priestley saw delirious men waving arms brown to the elbow with faecal matter. The patients were alive with vermin; in the half light he attempted to brush what he took to be an accumulation of dust from the folds of a patient's clothes, and he discovered it to be a moving mass of lice. In one room in compound No. 8 the patients lay so close to one another on the floor that he had to stand straddle-legged across them to examine them.

Captain Vidal's description is even more appalling. It was impossible, he says, to obtain bedpans for the British patients, and consequently in cases of delirium, and even in less serious cases, the state of the mattress was indescribable. Even such a thing as paper for sanitary purposes was almost unobtainable. The difficulty in the way of obtaining sufficient drugs and dressings was for a long time extreme. Camphorated oil, Captain Lauder says, could never at Wittenberg, contrary to his experience in other German camps, be secured in adequate quantity, yet this was practically the only stimulant available. Day after day a list of medical requisites would be sent out, and only a third of the things requested would be supplied. Bed sores were common. In several cases toes or whole feet became gangrenous, and sufficient bandages were not available to dress them. One of the patients now returned to this country, Private Lutwyche, of the 1st Battalion Royal Scots Fusiliers, had in May to have one leg amputated below the knee, and in July the other leg amputated at the same place, in both cases owing to gangrene. Had dressings at the proper time been available both feet would in all probability have been saved. And his case does not stand alone. The officers are quite satisfied that the *post* typhus gangrene, which was so common, was largely due to the fact that for so many patients there were neither socks nor anything else to keep their feet warm. In the earlier stages of the epidemic there was practically no hospital clothing available for the British prisoners. There was only a small sulphur chamber for disinfecting purposes. When a patient's outer clothing was taken off to be sent to the disinfectant he had to be left in his shirt, as no other clothing or shirts were supplied. Each patient brought

his blankets from the camp with him, and as no covering could be provided for him while disinfection was taking place it was impossible adequately to disinfect his clothing unless he was to be left naked. As regards the washing of patients in hospital, this was entirely out of the question. Until a supply of soap was obtained by Captain Vidal's efforts from England at a later date there was no soap forthcoming. The only supply was a small quantity secured from the officers' canteen, and that was kept for the very worst cases.

#### CRIMINAL NEGLECT.

In all this work Major Priestley, Captain Vidal, and Captain Lauder were splendidly supported by the many English prisoners who volunteered as nurses. Many of these devoted men caught the infection and died of the fever.

On one occasion only during the whole course of the epidemic did Dr. Aschenbach enter the hospital, or even the camp. His visit took place about four weeks after Major Priestley's arrival, and after some kind of order had been evolved. He came attired in a complete suit of protective clothing, including a mask and rubber gloves. His inspection was brief and rapid. For his services in combating the epidemic, Dr. Aschenbach, it is understood, has been awarded the Iron Cross. Some of the German guards outside the camp were infected by prisoners to whom, contrary to orders, they persisted in selling things. These men were placed by the Germans in a hospital outside the camp, and one of the German medical staff, an Alsatian as it happened, was sent to attend them. At a later stage in the outbreak this young man came to the hospital, but simply to take bacteriological specimens for research work at Magdeburg. He helped in no way. With these exceptions no visit was paid to the camp during the whole outbreak by any member of the German Medical Service. Yet for months the plague-stricken camp was starved of the barest necessities of existence and of the simplest drugs, and was not even provided with surgical dressings for the patients' wounds. We are therefore compelled to look elsewhere for an explanation of the criminal neglect of which, as it seems, the German authorities were guilty. And it is found in the history of the administration of the Wittenberg Camp from the very commencement. Incredible as it may seem, the action of the officers and guards in precipitately deserting the camp and thenceforth controlling its caged inmates with loaded rifles from the outside, was only in keeping with the methods and conduct of these men throughout. The cruelty of the administration at Wittenberg Camp from the very commencement has become notorious. Savage dogs were habitually employed to terrorise the prisoners; flogging with a rubber whip was frequent; men were struck with little or no provocation, and were tied to posts with their arms above their heads for hours. Captain Lauder reports that many of these men went so far as to look upon the typhus, with all its horrors, as a godsend; they preferred it to the presence of the German guards.

And the callousness during the outbreak even of so prominent an officer as Dr. Aschenbach is illustrated by an incident related by Captain Lauder. Shortly after their arrival at the camp, Major Fry, with Captain Lauder, was begging Dr. Aschenbach, standing outside the entanglements, for some medical requisite urgently required. One of his staff with Dr. Aschenbach was apparently favourably inclined towards the request, but it was curtly refused by Dr. Aschenbach, who turned away with the words "Schweine Engländer." An incident like that, with all it implies, speaks volumes.

The effects of such methods as have been described were manifest even on October 29th, 1915, when, as has been stated, Mr. Lithgow-Osborne visited the camp. In his report of that visit, after remarking that the authorities of the camp regard their prisoners as criminals whom fear alone keeps obedient, Mr. Osborne proceeds:

"In no other camp have I found signs of fear on the part of the prisoners that what they might

say to me would result in suffering to them afterwards";

and Mr. Gerard, speaking of his visit of November 8th, says:

"The impression gained after careful examination of the camp and long conversations with the prisoners was even more unfavourable than I had been led to expect."

We are forced to the conclusion that the terrible sufferings and privations of the afflicted prisoners during the period under review are directly chargeable to the deliberate cruelty and neglect of the German officials whose elementary duty it was, in the words of the Geneva Convention, to respect and take care of these men, wounded and sick as they were, without distinction of nationality, but who acted as if neither that Convention, nor even the ordinary instincts of humanity, had any place in their scheme of things.

(Signed) ROBERT YOUNGER.

## RED CROSS PRISONERS IN GERMANY.

### INDIGNITIES ON RUSSIAN DOCTORS AND NURSES.

Russian doctors, nurses, and orderlies were treated by the Germans with as little regard for the Geneva Convention as was shown to British and French doctors. At the time of the first Russian retreat from East Prussia the divisional field hospital of the 28th (Russian) Division was left in the town of Pilkallen. The Germans on occupying the town took its forty orderlies and three assistant doctors prisoners. Later in August, 1914, the chief surgeon, Dr. Zviagentzov, was taken prisoner near the town of Stolupen. "In spite of the fact that he wore the badge of the Red Cross, the Germans tore off his shoulder straps, made him take off the doctor's badge of his regiment and the cockade of his cap; and then took his purse out of his pocket and the money out of his purse." He was then made to tramp with a column of soldier prisoners to the town of Gumbinnen, and when he lagged behind was urged forward with the butt of a rifle or the point of a bayonet. He was ultimately sent on to Insterburg, in Germany.

On the 28th of August, 1914, at Goldap, when the Russians again were retiring from East Prussia, the Germans seized the medical staff of a Russian field hospital (310th mobile), including three sisters of mercy, who were told that if they tried to escape they would be shot. They were treated with great indignity, insulted, half starved, and kept as prisoners in the camp at Hannerstein for five months. They were then allowed to return to Russia.

### NO MEDICAL NECESSARIES FOR ENEMY WOUNDED.

But the treatment of the sisters was kindly by the side of that meted out to the Russian doctors at Goldap. The following are the experiences of one of them:

"Everything was taken away from us—money, papers, purses, rings, field-glasses, notebooks, &c. We were thus rifled of all we possessed by German officers and soldiers, headed by the surgeon-major of a cavalry regiment. Those who tried to hide their money were beaten by the major himself. Other doctors were with us not belonging to our hospital. And all this was practised on members of the Red Cross, entitled to protection by virtue of the Geneva Convention. Our sisters of mercy were also at first sent to prison with us, but in a few hours they were sent back to a Red Cross lazaretto, and we saw them no more. The majority of the soldiers were placed out in the yard, where they remained throughout our stay in the prison, in spite of cold weather and heavy rain. There were wounded men amongst them, who received no attention from anybody except ourselves.

#### PRODDED WITH THE BAYONET.

In these horrible conditions we dressed their wounds on our own initiative, with the help of packets of material which the wounded Russians had brought with them. For two days none of us received any food. On the evening of the second day we received a small basin of peasoup, and many of us did not get even that. On the third day a piece of bread, less than a pound, was served out to each person, and from that time we began to get peasoup once a day. On that day we were transferred to the barracks of the local regiment, where we each received a mattress stuffed with wood shavings thrown down on the floor. We were lodged in the armoury, with very little room and plenty of dust and dirt. On the fifth day we were roused up at five o'clock in the morning, and after peasoup for breakfast we were taken from Goldap to the town of Angerburg, distant about 40 or 50 kilometres. This journey was made in the daytime. We marched at a quick pace, with only one stoppage of half an hour, and we reached Angerburg at eight o'clock at night. Our column consisted of about 4,000 men. Those who fell out were prodded on with butt ends of rifles and at the point of the bayonet. We got nothing to drink on the way, and those who stopped at the wells in passing were driven away with bayonets. The march was a very painful one after five days' hunger."

The doctor who managed to send this letter home to his wife is still a prisoner, notwithstanding a protest addressed to the German Government.

#### ON THE MARCH.

Similar evidence of doctor prisoners being robbed of all their personal belongings has been given by the senior surgeon of the 73rd Artillery Brigade, Gregory Dimitrovich Onisimov, who was captured by the enemy on the 30th of August, 1914, near "Malvishek," in East Prussia, but

has since been released. The most striking and characteristic part of this ex-prisoner's testimony is a description of the insulting treatment received by Russian prisoners from the soldiers of their German escort on the road to Insterburg. "The peaceful temper of our German convoy did not last long. We soon began to meet detachments of German troops, who swore and shook their fists and levelled their rifles and revolvers at us, shouting, 'Why lead these men about when they can be settled here on the spot?' This kind of remark was shouted at us in German, Polish, and broken Russian. The peaceful inhabitants also reviled us and called upon the soldiers to despatch us there and then. They shouted 'nach Berlin!'—'To Berlin with them!'—'To Welhau!'—'Russischer schweinhund'—'Russian swine!' and so forth. The soldiers of the escort were taken into houses on the road and made drunk, so that they also began to amuse themselves at our expense. The German soldier walking on my right took his rifle from his shoulder, as if tired, and held it in such a way that the muzzle touched my right temple, and then he played carelessly with the lock of it, as though unaware of what he was doing. When I moved out of the way he said, 'Ah, you're afraid of losing your head. There's no danger.' As soon as the guard on one side had had his little joke his comrade on the other side began. Another soldier on a cart came along purposely handling his rifle so as to stick the muzzle into my chest, and when I warded it off he roared with laughter and seemed highly delighted. When going down a steep part of the road the driver of a cart behind intentionally drove into us and struck me on the legs with the shafts. I shouted to him to stop and not break my legs. He simply replied, 'Bad to have no legs!' This kind of thing went on throughout the march. Sometimes we were driven forward like horses, and the wounded men in the carts were so shaken about that they groaned with pain. The guards did not allow us to turn round to speak with them, and no attention was paid to our entreaties to drive them slowly."

## XIV.—DEPORTATIONS INTO SLAVERY.

### RUSSIAN CITIZENS MURDERED AND DEPORTED.

#### THE DESTRUCTION OF KALISZ.

**K**ALISZ, in Russian Poland, is a town of 50,000 inhabitants. It is just over the German frontier, and was occupied by the Germans in the first days of August, 1914, the Russians retiring from it on August 2. The Germans entered the city at midnight with a battalion of infantry and a troop of Uhlans, under the command of Major Preusker. The troops were billeted, and the Germans confiscated the City Treasury, containing about £3,000. In the evening of the next day rumours spread that an unknown column of soldiers was approaching the city. The firing of a patrol was heard. In fifteen minutes the whole German detachment was in readiness in the streets, and indiscriminate firing began. Four hundred innocent inhabitants were killed or wounded. Major Preusker immediately laid the blame for the firing on the inhabitants, seized the Mayor, M. Bukowski, and other hostages, and forced them to lie prone on the pavement for several hours. A man who covered the mayor

with a coat was shot. The mayor was temporarily released, and ordered to find a fine or ransom for the city of £5,000. He and twenty other hostages were then arrested and told they were to be shot. One of them was shot. The others were imprisoned in a windmill, whence they could see the three days' bombardment of the town, and were then sent to Posen, in Germany. Here they stopped in prison fifteen days, and were addressed by General von Blehne, who visited the prison to tell them of the benefits which Germany proposed to confer on Poland.

They were then sent back to Kalisz, which was in ashes. All the provisions and every object of value had been taken away in wagons commandeered by the Germans from local farmers and landowners. Every house, after being sacked, was set on fire; the best hospital of Kalisz had been bombarded, in spite of the big Red Cross flags flying from its roof. During the mayor's imprisonment Major Preusker had ordered to seek out the people who had hidden themselves in cellars. About 1,660 men were found. They were divided into groups of tens, and one of each group was ordered to be shot. In this manner 29 persons were shot. Fortunately for those remaining, these executions were stopped by a German officer, who

arrived in an automobile and brought the news that the Kaiser had pardoned them.

On August 7th all the officials and property owners of the city were called together at two in the afternoon in the City Hall under pretence of re-establishing normal life in the city.

But the assembled people saw that the Prussian soldiers were placed along streets in two rows. All of a sudden rifle firing was heard, and, as by a signal, the soldiers dispersed to all parts of the city, and massacred all inhabitants whom they met. Soon there was not a street where bodies of the slain could not be found.

At five o'clock the City Hall was set on fire, without any warning being given to those inside. On the contrary, all the exits were blocked.

Later, all the environs of the city were fortified by compulsory work of the inhabitants; bound to one another with ropes, they were forced to work, in parties of a hundred, for 14 hours every day. At night they were locked up in the city prison.

In all 4,000 people perished.

(Statement by the Mayor, M. Bukowinski.)

## DEPORTATION OF BELGIAN WORKMEN TO GERMANY.

At the railway workshops of Luttra the Belgian workmen refused to work for the Germans. The Nineteenth Report of the Belgian Commission gives the following particulars of the treatment they received in consequence.

Following on the workmen's refusal to work, the Germans endeavoured, first, to starve them into submission. The workmen applied to the Communal authority for help. Thereupon the Germans proceeded to arrest and imprison the officials who had given aid and threatened the workmen with deportation into Germany, with having their houses burnt, with having German workmen billeted on them.

The workmen were then "requisitioned" at their houses by soldiers. If absent, members of their families were seized as hostages. Before being deported to Germany they were kept all together in third-class railway carriages and cattle trucks for nine days, suffering severely from overcrowding and foul air, especially in the filthy cattle trucks. After the first six days of this they were shut off from the provisions which their families brought them, and put on bread and water.

Five hundred Uhlans were quartered about the village, billeted for a day and a night on the inhabitants. In spite of all this intimidation, the workmen refused to work for Germany. So it was resolved to deport them. They were divided into two classes—those who had refused to work from the first, and those who, having worked, and having perceived that they were aiding the military operations of the enemy, refused to work any longer. The latter were treated as "bad cases," and were dispatched to a penitential colony.

The prisoners were sent in batches of fifty to the internment camp of Senne, in Westphalia, being half starved on the journey, and on arrival at the camp had the letter "Z" marked on their garments. (The "bad cases" were treated as common criminals.) At the camp all were put to hard labour—handling logs, digging canal-trenches; and the work was made as hard and as dangerous to limbs and to health as possible. Sentries kept the workmen hard at it. Any attempt to rest was met by beating with sticks or rifle butts; and as everywhere in the German camps, the food was bad and insufficient. A number of the prisoners fell ill for want of proper nourishment. Their camp was separated only by a roadway from that of some French and English prisoners, who sometimes threw them eatables from the packages they had received from home.

Plank bedding, severe and cruel punishments for the least fault, exposure—all the German barbarities in short—

were inflicted on these unfortunate Belgian workmen, just as if they had been prisoners of war.

### OTHER DEPORTATIONS.

After the massacre and burning of Dinant, 416 inhabitants of the town, including M. Tschoffen, the Procureur de Roi de Dinant were deported to Germany, and taken to the prison at Cassel. They were first assembled on the heights about Dinant, and spent the day in the open air without food or drink. The German soldiers assured the captives that they were to be shot. They were given straw to sleep on, and next morning most of them were robbed of their money and valuables. They were then marched along the Ciney-road, past villages which had been burnt, and corpses lying by the wayside. The little conversation interchanged with their captors consisted of abuse from the latter, who sometimes called them beasts and sometimes spat at them.

The second day they were hustled along for nine hours till they arrived at Marche, and the 400 were crowded into a waiting-room marked for "100 soldiers." The German captain in charge of the escort paid them a visit to tell them that if any of them concealed money they would be shot. He repeated the threat when some of them endeavoured to fill their water-bottles. At last they were entrained—as usual, with prisoners captured by the Germans—in cattle-trucks. As usual they were cuffed and starved on the railway journey. As usual, the German civilian population at the stopping-places came to insult them, to threaten them and spit at them. The journey lasted twenty-five hours, without food or drink. They arrived at Cassel at 3 o'clock in the morning of Aug. 28, and were taken to the prison, a Cassel mob accompanying them with the usual greetings to prisoners.

They were taken to the prison and put by threes and fours in the cells. The cells were about 10 feet square, with small windows, and were ill-furnished—beds without mattresses, no chairs. In the prison they were treated as prisoners, with prisoners' fare, prisoners' exercise—the only alteration being the permission to speak to one another and the relief from prisoners' tasks. Most were half-starved, and medicaments for the sick were hard to get. Here they were kept till Nov. 18, when a first batch of prisoners were released; and smaller batches went back to Belgium at intervals. Some went back to Dinant. They, at least, lived. At Dinant itself 630 to 650 persons had been killed in the massacres.

The following instances are taken from the Belgian Tenth Official Report:—

#### BRUSSELS CIVILIANS.

After several days of most painful travelling, the civilian prisoners were interned at X—, where our witness reports that they found several hundred other Belgian non-combatants. To the number of over 650 they were shut up in a granary, and forced to sleep on straw. There were six priests among them. They were roused in the morning by blows and curses, and led into a barrack square; here an inscription was placed on their backs, designating them as "prisoners of war" at the town where they were detained. At midday they were given a bowl of soup. The punishments in vogue were the cells and the pillory—on which men were exposed for hours on end—not to speak of curses and blows from sticks or the butt ends of rifles. In this place there were imprisoned 300 inhabitants of a certain Flemish village, including the parish priest, his curate, the schoolmaster, the secretary of the commune, and a seminarist, as also a priest from the diocese of Namur, a seminarist from Hoogstraeten, and a clerical professor from the College of St. Pierre at Brussels.

#### CAPTIVES FROM LOUVAIN.

From another witness we have information concerning the lot of the civilian prisoners interned at another



German town. This was the place to which a great number of the inhabitants of Louvain were carried off. Crammed together in goods wagons without windows, these poor people, among whom were over 100 women and children, some of the latter mere infants, were forced to travel almost without food and without any chance of sleep. At Z—— they were turned out, to be lodged in sheds which in time of peace served some for horses and others for soldiers. Many of these people remain there still; most of them have only their summer clothing, some no proper clothing at all, for they were turned out of their houses just as they were, without being permitted to finish their dressing or to take any baggage in their hands. They have only straw to sleep upon, and it has never been renewed. They were given on their arrival only one blanket between each two persons, and these blankets were old, dirty, and very thin. Fire and lighting were unknown luxuries. The food consists of one loaf for each three persons given out on alternate days, and this loaf weighs less than six pounds. Each morning and evening they have a small ration of coffee, and each day at 11 a.m. a bowl of soup, which it is often impossible to consume. The German authorities have made no provision for the cleanliness of the prisoners—no towels, no soap. After a time those of the prisoners who had money were able to improve their condition somewhat; but many had been carried off without warning, and had no funds whatever.

#### FROM LOUVAIN TO COLOGNE (BELGIAN REFUGEE).

“On 27th August we were brought down to the railway station and shut up in cattle trucks, on whose floors there was dung ‘*haut comme ça*.’ We travelled four days without receiving food of any kind and without being allowed to open the doors. We were sixty in each truck. On the fourth night we entered Cologne, where we were led up and down the streets. Women spat in our faces. Our lodging for the night was on the boards of a sort of open-air music hall. Seventy persons had to stand out in the rain. We received a loaf for every ten prisoners; this loaf was fifteen days old (the date was stamped on it) and too hard to eat. Next day we were taken back to the station about 10 a.m. During the night we had heard the soldiers ordered to load their rifles. Then we were put into another train, sixteen persons in each third-class compartment, and were brought back again to Brussels—no food was distributed, and we were 50 hours in this train.”

#### ARREST OF CIVILIANS, MURDERS, AND EXECUTIONS.

Many inhabitants of Lebbeke, St. Gilles, and Termonde were arrested by the German troops, and sent off to Germany. The parish priest of Lebbeke, his curate, the communal secretary, the notary, and about 450 other people from the above-named places were interned, partly at the camp of Soltau, partly at the camp of Münster. During the whole of their journey, and for the first part of their imprisonment, they were treated in a most odious fashion. While on the march three of them, exhausted by hunger, tried to turn off from the road; they were at once put to death—two were bayoneted, the third was thrown down on the ground and clubbed.

### THE LILLE DEPORTATIONS.

From the French Yellow Book, dealing with the conduct of the German authorities towards the inhabitants of the invaded Departments, the Note prepared by M. Briand, and despatched by him to neutral Powers, and from published letters received from residents of the towns affected, we learn of this new horror—the outcome of German Kultur. M. Briand points out in his Note that:—

“On various occasions the Government of the Republic has had to draw the attention of neutral Powers to the

proceedings employed contrary to Treaty by the German military authorities in dealing with the inhabitants of the French territory which they temporarily occupy.

“The Government of the Republic is to-day obliged to place under the notice of foreign Governments the documents which furnish proof that our enemies have decreed fresh measures of even greater inhumanity.

“On the order of General von Graevenitz, and with the aid of the 64th Infantry Regiment detached by the German General Headquarters, about 25,000 French subjects, young girls of between 16 and 20 years of age, young women and men up to the age of 55, without distinction of social condition, have been torn from their homes at Roubaix, Tourcoing, and Lille, separated without pity from their families and forced to work in the fields in the Departments of the Aisne and the Ardennes.

“Better illustration of this fresh crime of the Imperial German Government than could be furnished by any comment is to be found in the placards of the German authorities, the sorrowing protests of the Mayor and the Bishop of Lille.”—

#### WHOLESALE DEPORTATION.

As the appeal, by the German authorities, for voluntary labour did not come up to their expectation, as a consequence of their having in 1915 robbed the labourers of the fruit of their toil, the following order was issued in these terms:—

“All the inhabitants of the house, with the exception of children below 14 years of age and their mothers, and old men, must be ready to be transported within an hour and a half. An officer will finally decide who is going to be taken to the concentration camp. The inhabitants of the house therefore must gather in front of their domicile. In case of bad weather they will be allowed to remain in the lobby. The door of the house must remain open. All appeals will be useless. No inhabitant, even those who will not be deported, will be allowed to leave his home before 8 in the morning. German time. Every one will have a right to 13 kilogrammes (about 27 lb.) of luggage. If there is any excess weight everything belonging to that person will be refused without ceremony. The baggage must be separate for each person, and must have a label clearly written and firmly fixed. The address will give surname and Christian name, and the number of the identity card. It is absolutely necessary in your own interest to take utensils for eating and drinking, as well as a blanket, good shoes, and linen. Everyone must have his identity card. Anybody trying to escape deportation will be mercilessly punished.—*Etappen Kommandatur*.”

This was followed by a week of terror.

“The 64th Infantry Regiment was removed from its more heroic duties at Verdun, and sent on an order from General Headquarters to see to the carrying out of this inhuman proclamation, which should make of the Holy Week of 1916 a week of shame for every German. In the town where the blackest misery has long prevailed, rumour as to what was about to befall had filled the hearts of everyone with apprehension. During the three weeks which preceded the posting of the placard there had been isolated raids. A tramcar would be stopped by a detachment of troops, and three or four men or girls ordered out of it, and taken off there and then for unknown destinations. The protests of the Bishop and French civil authorities against these inhuman proceedings were unheeded. The only reply of the general to the Bishop’s personal remonstrances was: ‘You Bishop, be quiet, and get out!’

“A meeting of protest was arranged, and while that meeting was actually in progress the placards appeared upon the walls of Lille. The town was full of troops, and a new general arrived to direct operations. The placards appeared on the 18th. Never had Holy Week seen the churches in Lille crowded with congregations so fervent in their prayers. Never were the words of

pity and consolation uttered by the clergy listened to with more hope.

"At 3 o'clock on Saturday morning, at Tourcoing, Roubaix, and Lille, the soldiers of Germany marched down to occupy positions for this victory. By 4 o'clock in the morning they had surrounded the Fives quarter which was the first district attacked. At cross-roads, and at the end of each street, they installed machine-gun sections, and then patrols of 10 or 15 men with fixed bayonets battered on the doors of the houses, ordering the inhabitants out into the street. Outside each house there hung a list of all the inhabitants, and there was no means of escape. An officer, accompanied by a non-commissioned officer, selected their slaves, who were given from ten minutes to an hour and a half in which to prepare themselves for their departure and bid farewell to their families."

#### TERRIBLE SCENES OF GRIEF.

The raids were accompanied by terrible scenes of grief and sorrow, and not a few elderly people lost their reason when they saw their daughters being carried off. Some of the men, especially of the Landsturm, seemed to be conscious that they were engaged in shameful work; some of the officers, too, admitted that nothing could ever cleanse the German flag from this fresh stain put upon it. Indeed, it is said in Lille that a number of officers and men are in the Citadel awaiting their trial for refusing to dishonour themselves.

By this act of honour they spared themselves scenes which one would have thought might melt the heart even of a German—the maddened woman whose husband, son, and daughter were taken, who cursed them in their race, in their wives, and in their children; or the woman who broke out into a sweat of blood when her boy was taken, and whose shattered reason refused to recognise him when he was brought back.

From a letter received from Lille, and written on April 30th, 1916, and published in the *Times*, it is stated:—

"We have just passed through a terrible three weeks, but it is especially during the last week that we have passed through mortal tortures of anguish which are especially hard for a mother's heart to bear. On the pretext of the difficulties raised by England with regard to supplies, and the refusal of the idle to work voluntarily in the fields, forced evacuation has been carried out with every imaginable refinement of cruelty. It was not done by whole families. That we should suffer together was too good for us. So they have taken in each family four or five people—men and women, children of 15, young girls, anybody upon whom fell the arbitrary choice of the officer—and, in order to prolong our misery, they carried out their work by district, without even indicating the district in which they were next going to operate.

"It was 3 o'clock in the morning when these heroes, headed by their bands and armed with bayonets and

machine-guns, came to carry off the women and children, God knows where, and God knows why! They say that it is far from the front, for work in no way connected with the war; but we already know that these unhappy children have been received with stones in districts where the population had refused to work for the Germans and had been told that they were volunteer workers. It was a devilish lie. . .

"About three weeks ago there were raids in two big neighbouring towns. People were taken off anyhow, in the streets and from the tramways, and the persons thus carried off never reappeared."

Altogether some 25,000 persons have been deported, but no detailed account has been given as to the places, or nature of the work, to which they have been sent.

#### BRUTAL TREATMENT.

Among the many cases in which violence in various forms has been used towards these most unfortunate people, the following instances are reproduced from the *Yellow Book*:—

"A woman employed on a farm in the Ardennes testified that her husband was shot for disobeying an order to requisition the stock, and that she herself, for the same offence, was imprisoned for two days.

"According to a man who was evacuated from the Nord Department, youths of the 1915, 1916, and 1917 classes of recruits have been threatened that, unless they did the work demanded of them, they would be sent as prisoners of war to Germany.

"At a village in Meurthe et Moselle, a labour party being late in arriving, the mayor was hung up by his arms from a tree for some time.

"In the Aisne Department a farmer who did not want to work was undressed and sent, almost naked, into the fields under rifle and shell fire, with his eyes bandaged and his hands bound. He was left there for a day, and then taken as a hostage to Germany.

"Many witnesses declare that at different places, particularly in the Departments of the Aisne and Pas de Calais, the inhabitants were forced to work in the trenches.

"A youth of 16 states that in October, 1914, he was forced, with some 50 comrades, to do trench work in the Plain of L—, in the Pas de Calais, for six days. They were then taken to L—, where the Germans used them as shields. Forty of them were killed. The witness was wounded by the splinter of a '75' shell.

"In another locality people have been forced to work in factories, in gun repairs, and in the manufacture of stakes for the trenches.

"In many places women have been forced to work on sandbags for the trenches. Miss R., from an Aisne village, states that she, with 300 women, was made to do this."

## XV.—GERMANY'S SUBMARINE CAMPAIGN.

### THE BLACK LIST.

		Lives Lost.
Oct. 26, 1914	.. <i>Amiral Ganteaume</i> (French)	40
March 28, 1915	.. <i>Falaba</i> (British)	111
May 7, "	.. <i>Lusitania</i> (British)	1,198
June 28, "	.. <i>Armenian</i> (British)	30
Aug. 19, "	.. <i>Arabic</i> (British)	30
Sept. 4, "	.. <i>Hesperian</i> (British)	32
Nov. 7, "	.. <i>Ancona</i> (Italian)	208
Dec. 24, "	.. <i>Ville de Ciotat</i> (French)	80
Dec. 30, "	.. <i>Persia</i> (British)	385
March 24, 1916	.. <i>Sussex</i> (French)	52
March 30, "	.. <i>Portugal</i> (Franco-Russian Hospital Ship)	115

### " AMIRAL GANTEAUME."

"The French vessel *Amiral Ganteaume*, which was conveying refugees to England, was torpedoed by a German submarine in the English Channel. No opportunity was given to the passengers to escape in the ship's boats, and it was not owing to any act of the commander of the submarine that the lives of all on board were not lost" (Sir Edward Grey). Despatch to Mr. Page, March 30th, 1915.

### ADMIRAL VON TIRPITZ AND HIS POLICY.

Admiral von Tirpitz, in an interview given to Karl H. von Wiegand on December 2nd, 1914, and published in the United States on December 22nd, 1914, foretold the submarine attacks which were to be made on British merchant shipping—the motive being, so the Admiral said, "to starve England and further to strike terror into her civilian population by the isolation of the country from the rest of the world."

On February 5th the Imperial German Government proclaimed its policy of piracy; on February 18th President Wilson addressed his solemn protest against that policy, because of the peril in which it involved American ships and citizens; on February 15th Germany issued a supplementary warning to neutral nations to keep their ships out of the "war zone."

### THE 'AGUILA.'

It would not be possible to supply details of the circumstances in which all the merchant vessels, trawlers, and fishing boats were sunk by German submarines after the formal German declaration that the submarine war would begin on February 28th. Before this the *Amiral Ganteaume* had been sunk.

A typical example of the German methods is furnished by the incidents accompanying the sinking of the s.s. *Aguila*, bound from Liverpool to Lisbon and the Canaries with a cargo of peat. She was torpedoed off Pembroke on March 27th.

The submarine began by firing across the *Aguila's* bows. Her skipper, Captain Bannerman, attempted to escape, but was quickly overtaken. This action on the part of the *Aguila* appears to have exasperated the Germans, for only four minutes were allowed for the crew to leave the vessel.

While the crew were still launching the boats the sub-

marine opened fire on the *Aguila*, and continued firing, killing the Chief Engineer, Edwards, the boatswain, Andersen, another man Kirk, and wounding several. About twenty shells struck the *Aguila*; as she still continued afloat, the submarine fired a torpedo at her, and she went down.

One boat contained ten of the crew, the stewardess and a woman passenger. The woman passenger was hit by a fragment of shell, and fell over the gunwale. The boat capsized in the heavy seas, and the stewardess as well as the passenger was drowned.

In all ten people were drowned.

### THE "FALABA."

On Sunday morning, March 28th, the s.s. *Falaba*, bound from Liverpool to the West Coast of Africa with 150 passengers on board, was approached by a German submarine, sighted by Captain Davis from the bridge. The submarine was flying the British Ensign at first, and when she got close hauled it down and substituted the German flag. The *Falaba* at first endeavoured to get away; but on being signalled by the submarine, "Stop or I will fire into you," slackened speed and stopped. The captain and the chief officer adopted this course because of the passengers on board, and the boats were lowered. Five boats had been slung out when a torpedo was fired; several boats had not been lowered, and a number of the passengers and the crew were on deck. They were perfectly plain for the crew on the submarine to see, because the crew for their part were able to testify that the sailors on the submarine were in khaki; and could see that the submarine carried two guns. It was while the crew of the *Falaba* were trying to lower the boats—one of which in the hurry and confusion had capsized and its occupants were struggling in the water—that the submarine, five minutes after the *Falaba* had stopped, steamed over from port to starboard, got into position, and deliberately launched her torpedo at a distance of 150 yards.

It struck the *Falaba* near the engine-room, and she sank in ten minutes.

The submarine made no attempt to give assistance; and it was affirmed by half-a-dozen witnesses that the Germans looked on and laughed at the victims struggling in the water, and answered their cries for help with jeers. They steamed off, leaving them to their fate.

Fortunately some help, though not enough, was at hand. The steam drifter *Eileen Emma*, of Lowestoft, picked up forty persons from the water, including Captain Davis, who was then nearly gone. The captain and five others died before the *Eileen Emma* could get to Milford Haven. Another drifter, the *Wenlock*, of Lowestoft, picked up eight people, two of whom died.

In all, 111 lives were lost, passengers and crew.

### THE "LUSITANIA."

The foregoing acts of piracy were but the prelude to the sinking of the *Lusitania*, a murder on so appalling a scale that, outside Germany, there was no nation or people which did not protest in horror of it. So deeply have the occurrence and its details bitten into the memory of civilised peoples that there is no necessity to do more than recall the bare facts here.

The *Lusitania* left New York on May 1st after warnings had been issued by the German Embassy that passengers

would sail at their own peril. Her voyage was uneventful till she arrived off the south coast of Ireland, when, at 2.12 in the afternoon of Friday, May 7th, she was torpedoed without warning, on the starboard side of the ship, and sunk in twenty minutes.

There were 2,160 passengers and crew on board; of these 1,150 perished, including, of course, many women and children and a number of Americans.

"ARABIC," AUGUST 19TH, 1915.

The White Star liner *Arabic*, which sailed from Liverpool on Wednesday, August 18th, for New York, with 181 passengers on board, was torpedoed without warning by a German submarine at half-past nine the next morning. When torpedoed she was a long way south of Ireland. Captain Finch was on the bridge at the time his ship was torpedoed; and he saw the torpedo coming from 300 yards away; but he did not see the submarine. The torpedo hit the *Arabic* at right angles, a terrific explosion following. The boats had already been swung out as the vessel was in the so-called danger zone; one of them was shot clean into the air by the explosion. Fourteen, however, were lowered, and although the captain reported that one had been capsized, the loss of life was officially declared to be no more than 47—out of a total of 424 passengers and crew—a result due wholly to the heroic conduct of the crew and to the engine-room staff. The German submarine disappeared. Among the passengers were a number of Americans, two of whom were drowned.

"HESPERIAN," SEPTEMBER 4TH, 1915

The Allan Liner *Hesperian*, outward bound from Liverpool to Montreal, was struck by a German torpedo at about half-past eight of the evening following the day on which she had left Liverpool (September 3rd). The vessel was hit near the bows, but fortunately the damage was not sufficient to sink her. All the passengers, numbering 353, and crew of 300, were taken off safely, and the vessel towed towards Queenstown. Twenty passengers were injured by the violent explosion. The evening was calm; there was no question of the deliberateness of the German submarine's action.

It was no fault of the German submarine that a disaster comparable to that of the *Lusitania* was averted. The attempt to murder 600 people was the more outrageous because it followed only a fortnight after the attack on the *Arabic*, and a week after Count Bernstorff's promise to Mr. Lansing, the U.S. Secretary of State, August 26th, that "Passenger liners will not be sunk by our submarines without warning, and without ensuring the safety of the non-combatants aboard, provided that the liners do not try to escape or offer resistance."

Count Bernstorff had, however, distinctly asserted that the change in naval policy in Berlin actually preceded the attack on the *Arabic*—that is to say, it was determined upon some time before August 18th, when the *Arabic* left Liverpool. The double incident of the *Arabic* and the *Hesperian* showed the value to be placed on German promises. By a remarkable coincidence, Lord Selborne's assurance that the British Navy had the submarine menace well in hand appeared on the same day, August 26th, as Count Bernstorff's promise that this form of submarine warfare should cease. The fact illuminates Mr. Balfour's subsequent suggestion (August 5th)\* that the German promise was undertaken because of the formidable losses which Germany had suffered in her submarine campaign.

THE "ANCONA."

On Monday, November 8th, 1915, the Italian liner *Ancona*, bound for New York from Naples and Messina,

with 507 passengers and crew, was shelled and afterwards torpedoed by a submarine flying the Austrian flag.

According to the testimony of the captain of the *Ancona*, the enemy submarine gave no signal whatever to the *Ancona* to stop, but announced her presence by a shell. (An official statement issued in Vienna described this as a warning shot fired across the steamer's bows; and went on to assert that the steamer did not stop. The official statement went on to declare that the escaping vessel was pursued by the submarine and fired at, and only stopped after being hit several times. These statements are wholly out of accord with what took place.) The *Ancona's* captain asserts that the steamer stopped at once after the first shot. All accounts of passengers aboard agree that immediately the *Ancona* was hit the captain ordered the boats to be lowered. The first shot had, however, produced a panic on board, women screaming piteously, and children clinging to their mothers. The submarine continued to shell the ship till she came up close alongside. Her commander, according to an English passenger, then spoke to the captain of the *Ancona*, and the passengers were told that a few minutes had been given for the passengers and crew to abandon the ship. No time was lost in making the necessary arrangements, but by this time all the passengers had lost their heads; there was a rush for the boats, which were being lowered. Two were overturned; and the shrieks of women and children rose again. During this heartrending scene the submarine continued to fire shot after shot. The English passenger, whose evidence has been quoted, says that the shots were not directed at the ship itself, but were fired all round the vessel, as if to create as much terror as possible. Other accounts affirm that the boats were fired upon and many wounded who were in them.

The *Ancona* was then torpedoed and sunk by the submarine. Of the passengers and crew 299 were saved and 208 lost.

The official Austrian explanation, after affirming that the vessel had tried to escape, attributed the loss of life to the conduct of the crew of the steamer; and rebutted the charge of firing on the *Ancona*, after the ship had stopped, by remarking that "ammunition was too valuable."

To this explanation the Italian rejoinder was:—

"The Austrian *communiqué* is false in its fundamental facts. All the survivors of the *Ancona* testify that the submarine made no signal whatsoever to bring the ship to a stop, nor did it even fire a blank warning shot. The first shot was a shell. This armed aggression took place without any preliminary warning.

"The *Ancona* was bound for New York, and could not have been carrying either such passengers or cargo as could justify capture, and, therefore, she had no reason for attempting to avoid examination. Moreover, it is a false and malicious assertion to state that the loss of so many human lives was due to the conduct of the crew. On the contrary, the bombardment by the submarine continued after the *Ancona* had stopped, and was also directed against the boats filled with people, thereby causing numerous victims."

THE "SUSSEX."

The cross-Channel steamer *Sussex* was torpedoed without warning about three o'clock on Saturday afternoon, March 25th, 1916, and was struck heavily forward. Boats were got away, and the ship remained afloat, though part of the front portion of the vessel was blown away, till assistance came from a French trawler and a British torpedo boat. The *Sussex* was extremely well known, as were the times of her sailings and arrivals, so that there was no possibility of mistaking her for anything but the cross-Channel passenger steamer that she was. There were twenty-five Americans on board, including Professor and Mrs. and Miss Baldwin, and Mr. Edward Marshall, of the *New York Sun*, as well as a number of other neutrals.

\* Letter to a correspondent.

# GERMAN WAR MEDALS.\*



NEPTUNE SEATED ON THE TOP OF A SUBMARINE  
BETWEEN THE PERISCOPES SHAKING HIS FIST AT  
A SINKING MERCHANT SHIP.

Motto: "God punish England."



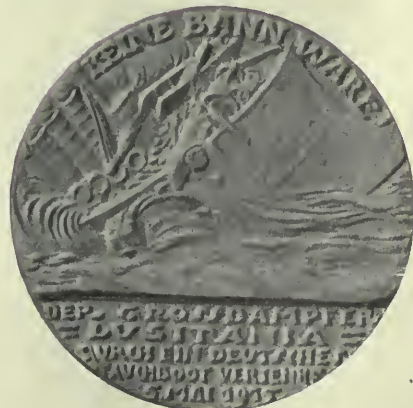
GRAND ADMIRAL VON TIRPITZ.

By K. Goetz.



DEATH SELLING TICKETS AT THE OFFICE  
OF THE CUNARD LINE.

A man is reading in a newspaper about the U boat danger,  
but another points to the words "Business First."



"NO CONTRABAND."

"The liner *Lusitania* sunk by a German  
submarine. May 5, 1915."

\* Reproduced from specimens in the Victoria and Albert Museum.

## THE "PORTUGAL."

The official Report issued from Petrograd concerning the sinking of the Franco-Russian Hospital ship *Portugal* in the Black Sea is as follows:—

"At eight on the morning of March 30 the steamer *Portugal*, a Franco-Russian hospital ship, was lying near Ofi, in Eastern Anatolia, having been sent there for wounded, when it was attacked by a German submarine and blew up. Two torpedoes were fired, the second striking the engine-room, and the vessel sank in less than a minute. Eleven of 26 Sisters of Charity were saved in boats and cutters which accompanied the *Portugal*. The missing include Count Tatischeff, the Red Cross delegate, Dr. Pankrisheff Tikhmeneva, Baroness Meyendorff, the Sister Superior, and 14 Sisters of Charity, 50 men of the Russian crew and Red Cross men, and 29 of the French crew. There were on board 273 persons, of whom 158 were saved.

"The attack was made in broad daylight. The submarine steered round the vessel and fired at her point-blank. This act by the Germans, perfectly useless from a military point of view, evokes indignation, and proves once again that peace with an enemy who insanely violates laws both divine and human is impossible before his complete destruction has been effected."

## THE "VILLE DI CIOTAT."

The French mail boat *Ville di Ciotat* was torpedoed without warning on Christmas Eve, December 24, 1915. Eighty lives were lost.

No official list has been issued of merchant vessels torpedoed without warning in 1916. But the Secretary of the Admiralty has published the following list of *unarmed* British and neutral vessels torpedoed by German submarines *without warning* in 1915. All are steamships except where otherwise stated:—

To DEC. 31, 1915.

Jan. 30 ..	<i>Tokomaru</i>	April 18 ..	<i>Vanilla</i>
Feb. 15 ..	<i>Dulwich</i>		(trawler)
" 20 ..	<i>Cambank</i>	May 1 ..	<i>Edale</i>
" 23 ..	<i>Branksome</i>	" 3 ..	<i>Minterne</i>
	<i>Chine</i>	" 6 ..	<i>Centurion</i>
" 23 ..	<i>Oakby</i>	" 7 ..	<i>Lusitania</i>
" 24 ..	<i>Western Coast</i>	" 18 ..	<i>Drumchree</i>
" 24 ..	<i>Rio Parana</i>	" 19 ..	<i>Dumfries</i>
" 24 ..	<i>Harpalion</i>	June 1 ..	<i>Saidieh</i>
March 7 ..	<i>Bengrove</i>	" 4 ..	<i>Inkum</i>
" 9 ..	<i>Blackwood</i>	" 8 ..	<i>Strathcarron</i>
" 9 ..	<i>Princess Victoria</i>	" 12 ..	<i>Leuctra</i>
		" 15 ..	<i>Straithmairn</i>
" 11 ..	<i>Florazan</i>	" 28 ..	<i>Dumfriesshire</i>
" 13 ..	<i>Invergyle</i>	July 28 ..	<i>Mangara</i>
" 18 ..	<i>Glenartney</i>	Aug. 1 ..	<i>Fulgens</i>
" 21 ..	<i>Cairntorr</i>	" 10 ..	<i>Rosalie</i>
" 22 ..	<i>Concord</i>	" 16 ..	<i>Serbino</i>

April 1 ..	<i>Sven Seas</i>	Aug. 19 ..	<i>Arabic</i>
" 4 ..	<i>City of Bremen</i>	Sept. 12 ..	<i>Ashmore</i>
" 10 ..	<i>Harpalyce</i>	Nov. 19 ..	<i>Hallamshire</i>
" 15 ..	<i>Plarmigan</i>		

List of neutral vessels torpedoed by enemy submarines without warning:—

To DEC. 31, 1915.

Feb. 19 ..	<i>Belridge</i> (Norwegian)	May 7 ..	<i>Ellen</i> (Swedish)
March 13 ..	<i>Hannah</i> (Swedish)	" 25 ..	<i>Nebraskan</i> (American)
April 3 ..	<i>Douro</i> (sailing vessel) (Portuguese)	" 26 ..	<i>Betty</i> (Danish)
" 14 ..	<i>Folke</i> (Swedish)	June 9 ..	<i>Svein Jarl</i> (Norwegian)
" 15 ..	<i>Katwijk</i> (Dutch)	July 14 ..	<i>Rym</i> (Norwegian)
" 17 ..	<i>Ellisfontos</i> (Greek)	Aug. 18 ..	<i>Magda</i> (Norwegian)
May 2 ..	<i>Gulfight</i> (American)	" 27 ..	<i>Uranus</i> (Swedish)

## THE SUBMARINE E13.

In the early hours of August 19, 1915, the Submarine E13, under the command of Lieut.-Commander Layton, grounded on the Danish island of Saltholm, and all efforts failed to refloat her. At five o'clock in the morning a Danish torpedo-boat appeared on the scene and communicated to E13 that she would be allowed twenty-four hours to try to get off. At the same time a German torpedo-boat destroyer arrived and remained close to the submarine till two more Danish torpedo-boats came up, when she withdrew.

At 9 o'clock, while three Danish torpedo-boats were anchored close to the submarine, two German destroyers approached from the south. When about half-a-mile away one of them hoisted a commercial flag signal, but before the commander of the submarine had time to read it, the German destroyer fired a torpedo at her from a distance of about 300 yards. It exploded on hitting the bottom close to her.

At the same moment the German destroyer began shelling the men on the submarine with all her guns. The submarine could not reply. Her men, according to the Danish account, remained on her deck "looking on contemptuously." Lieut.-Commander Layton, seeing that his submarine was unable to defend herself, and was on fire fore and aft, gave orders to his crew to abandon her. While the men were in the water they were fired on by machine guns and shrapnel.

One of the Danish torpedo-boats immediately lowered her boats and steamed between the submarine and two German destroyers, who had therefore to cease fire. They then steamed away at full speed.

Fifteen British sailors were killed.

## XVI.—POISONED WELLS.

WHEN the troops of General Botha's command occupied Swakopmund, on January 14th, 1915, it was found that six drinking-wells had been poisoned with arsenic. In some instances bags full of arsenical cattle-dip were found in the wells.

General Botha addressed a letter (February 13th) to Lieut.-Colonel Franke, the commander of the German forces, calling his attention to this violation of the laws of war, and telling him that if the practice were persisted in he would hold the officers concerned responsible, and he would be compelled to take measures of reprisal.

Lieut.-Colonel Franke replied (February 21st), acknowledging the crime. He said his troops had been given orders to prevent the water supplies falling into the enemy's hands, and that having tried ineffectually to salt the wells they had had recourse to (arsenical) "kopper-dip."

Lieut.-Colonel Franke added that he had given orders to put warning notices by the wells.

General Botha replied with regrets (February 28th) that this use of poison received the support of the German military authorities, and said that the offence was not lessened by warning notices. As a matter of fact, there had been no warning notices at Swakopmund.

The Germans paid no attention to General Botha's demand that these practices should cease. A despatch from Captain Kruger of the German troops to an outpost at Pforte was intercepted three weeks later. It was dated March 10th, and read :

"The patrol at Gabib has been instructed thoroughly to infect with disease the Ida Mine. Approach Swakop, and Ida Mine with extreme caution, and do not water there any more."

## XVII.—THE EXECUTION OF MISS EDITH CAVELL.

AT 2 o'clock in the morning of October 12th Miss Edith Cavell, the English nurse who was the Matron of the Surgical Institute in Brussels, was hurried out of the Prison of St. Gilles, and was shot to death by a file of German soldiers. Her offence, admitted by herself, was that she had helped English and French soldiers, as well as young Belgians, to cross the frontier and escape from Belgium. Her condemnation before a German military tribunal, and according to the German military code, was a matter of course. The callousness with which the German authorities turned a deaf ear to every plea for mercy, and the duplicity with which they met every attempt on the part of the American and Spanish Ministers to obtain leniency or respite, gave to the execution its character of calculated savagery.

Miss Cavell, according to the official documents laid before the House of Lords, was arrested on August 5th. She was not accused of espionage, but solely of the offences we have named, evidence of which was probably hard to obtain. Nearly four weeks after her arrest, on August 31st, Mr. Brand Whitlock, the American Minister in Brussels, wrote to Baron von der Lancken, Chief of the German Political Division in Brussels, asking for confirmation of Miss Cavell's arrest ; and if it were true, asking for information about the charges against her, and for leave for the legal adviser of the American Legation, Mons. G. de Leval, to confer with the prisoner about her defence.

No reply was received for ten days, and a second letter was sent. Baron von der Lancken replied two days afterwards, confirming the arrest, and saying that the prisoner was in the prison of St. Gilles. He added :

"She herself confessed that she had concealed in her house English and French soldiers, and also Belgians, of military age, all of whom were seeking to proceed to the front. She admitted further that she had furnished these soldiers with the funds necessary to make the journey to

France, and that she had facilitated their departure from Belgium by procuring them guides, who enabled them secretly to pass the Dutch frontiers."

### OUTSIDE LEGAL ASSISTANCE REFUSED.

He refused permission for M. de Leval to see Miss Cavell, and declared that her defence was in the hands of the advocate Braun, who was already in communication with the competent German authority.

The United States Legation continued its efforts. M. de Leval, its legal adviser, saw Mr. Braun, the appointed advocate, and when Mr. Braun (who, as was found, could not plead) was exchanged for Mr. Kirschen, saw him too. He found that Mr. Kirschen had not been allowed to see Miss Cavell, because a lawyer defending a prisoner before a German Military Court is not allowed to see his client before the day of the trial, and is not shown the prosecution's documents. But Mr. Kirschen appeared to believe that the trial would be conducted so slowly and carefully that he would still be able to present a fair defence for his client. He assured M. de Leval over and over again that the trial would be a perfectly fair one, and that there could be no miscarriage of justice. He dissuaded M. de Leval from any attempt to be present at the trial, because "it would cause prejudice against Miss Cavell," even if the Germans permitted it.

Three days before the trial, Mr. Kirschen wrote to M. de Leval saying the trial would be on Thursday, October 7th. It lasted two days. Mr. Kirschen sent in no report. M. de Leval learnt from an outsider that it had taken place, but that judgment would not be given till a few days later. He tried to find Mr. Kirschen, but in vain ; and it was from another source that he learnt about the trial. Miss Cavell was one of thirty-five persons tried.

## MISS CAVELL'S ADMISSIONS.

"Miss Cavell," continues M. de Leval's report, "was prosecuted for having helped English and French soldiers, as well as Belgian young men, to cross the frontier and to go over to England. She had admitted by signing a statement before the day of the trial, and by public acknowledgment in Court, in the presence of all the other prisoners and the lawyers, that she was guilty of the charges brought against her, and she had acknowledged not only that she had helped these soldiers to cross the frontier, but also that some of them had thanked her in writing when arriving in England. This last admission made her case so much the more serious, because if it only had been proved against her that she had helped the soldiers to traverse the Dutch frontier, and no proof was produced that those soldiers had reached a country at war with Germany, she could only have been sentenced for an attempt to commit the 'crime' and not for the 'crime' being duly accomplished. As the case stood, the sentence fixed by the German military law was a sentence of death.

"In her oral statement before the Court, Miss Cavell disclosed almost all the facts of the whole prosecution. She was questioned in German, an interpreter translating all the questions in French, with which language Miss Cavell was well acquainted. She spoke without trembling, and showed a clear mind. Often she added some greater precision to her previous depositions. When she was asked why she helped these soldiers to go to England, she replied that she thought that, if she had not done so, they would have been shot by the Germans, and that therefore she thought she only did her duty to her country in saving their lives. The Military Public Prosecutor said that argument might be good for English soldiers, but did not apply to Belgian young men whom she induced to cross the frontier, and who would have been perfectly free to remain in the country without danger to their lives."

According to M. de Leval's information, Mr. Braun pleaded very well for the prisoner. But the Military Public Prosecutor asked the Court to pass a death sentence on Miss Cavell and eight other prisoners out of the thirty-five.

Judgment was, however, postponed. M. de Leval's informant thought that the Court would not go to the extreme limit.

On Sunday, 10th, M. de Leval called at the German Political Division in Brussels, and asked for permission to see Miss Cavell now. For permission also for the English clergyman, her friend Mr. Gahan, to see her.

## DELIBERATE GERMAN DECEPTION.

On Monday morning, 11th, M. de Leval had not made much headway. The German official at the Political Division, Mr. Conrad, refused permission for the English clergyman. He said also that M. de Leval could not see her till the judgment was pronounced and signed, *but this would only take place in a day or two*

M. de Leval, still persistent, tried again to find Mr. Kirschen. He could not find him. Another lawyer in the case told him he had heard judgment would not be pronounced till Tuesday morning, the 12th. *But shortly after 8 o'clock on the 11th, he heard privately, but reliably, that judgment had been passed at 5 o'clock in the afternoon; that Miss Cavell had been sentenced to death, and that she would be shot at 2 o'clock next morning.*

All that was true. Mr. Conrad, the German official, had still maintained as late as half-past six that sentence had not been pronounced. But the American Legation believed that he lied, and they were right. Mr. Brand Whitlock, the American Minister, who had been indefatigable in Miss Cavell's cause, was himself too ill to go out; but he gave instructions to Mr. Hugh Gibson, Secretary to the Legation. Mr. Gibson, accompanied by M. de Leval, hastened first to find the Spanish Minister, the Marquis de Villalobar; and the three went on a

desperate errand of mercy to find Baron von der Lancken. They took with them a note addressed by Mr. Brand Whitlock to Baron von der Lancken, and a plea for clemency addressed to the Governor-General Baron von Bissing.

## "HAVE PITY ON HER."

The Note to Baron von der Lancken was as follows:

"Mon cher Baron,—Je suis trop malade pour vous présenter ma requête moi-même, mais je fais appel à votre générosité de cœur pour l'appuyer et sauver de la mort cette malheureuse. Ayez pitié d'elle.—Votre bien dévoué,

(S) BRAND WHITLOCK."

They had to wait some time to see Baron von der Lancken, who was absent for the evening with all his staff, but they sent a messenger to him, and he returned with two other officials. He was told their mission, and he read Mr. Whitlock's letter aloud. His response was to express his disbelief that sentence had been passed; and demanded the source of the information. He continued to try to put his interlocutors off, but finally was prevailed upon to telephone to the Presiding Judge of the Court-martial. He was then obliged to admit that sentence had been passed and that the sentence would be carried out before morning.

Mr. Gibson, M. de Leval, the Marquis de Villalobar pleaded for clemency; at any rate for delay; they exhausted every plea, every reason.

Baron von der Lancken replied that the Military Governor was the supreme authority; but appeal from his decision could be carried only to the Emperor. He added that the Military Governor had discretionary powers to accept or to refuse acceptance to a plea for clemency. (This was in reference to the plea for clemency addressed to the Military Governor which the three petitioners had brought with them from Mr. Brand Whitlock.) After some discussion, he agreed to call up the Military Governor on the telephone and learn whether he had already ratified the sentence, and whether there was any chance of clemency.

He returned in half-an-hour, and said he had conferred personally with Baron von Bissing, who said that he had deliberated on the case, and that he considered the infliction of the death-penalty imperative. He therefore declined to accept Mr. Brand Whitlock's appeal for clemency, or any representation in regard to the matter.

## MR. BRAND WHITLOCK'S APPEAL.

Baron von der Lancken also pressed Mr. Gibson to take back the personal note, the pitiful little appeal already quoted, from Mr. Brand Whitlock. It was not a formal petition, not a *requête en grâce*, but he was so insistent that it was taken back. The party of three made one more despairing effort, the Marquis de Villalobar being especially determined—but nothing availed. They pleaded, protested, argued for delay in vain. They left the Bureau a little after midnight. Less than two hours later Miss Cavell was dead.

"American Legation, Brussels,  
October 11th, 1915.

"Excellency,—I have just been informed that Miss Cavell, an English subject, and consequently under the protection of my Legation, has been sentenced to death this morning by Court-martial.

"Without going into the causes which have inspired so severe a sentence—one more severe, if the information given me is correct, than in any of the other cases of the same kind which the same tribunal has sat upon—I feel justified in making an appeal to your Excellency's sentiments of humanity and generosity on behalf of Miss Cavell, that the death-penalty pronounced against her may be commuted, and that this unfortunate woman may not be shot.

"Miss Cavell is the Matron of the Surgical Institute of Brussels. She has spent her life in relieving the sufferings



of others, and has trained in her school many nurses now devoting themselves all over the world, in Germany as well as in Belgium, to the sick-bed. At the start of the war Miss Cavell lavished her care on German soldiers as well as those of other countries. Were there no other reason, so devoted a career surely inspires the utmost pity and readiness to pardon. If I am rightly informed, Miss Cavell, far from denying them, has, with praiseworthy frankness, confessed to all the acts with which she is charged and about which she, and she only, could have given information, a fact that has caused the extreme heaviness of the penalty imposed upon her.

"With confidence, therefore, and with the hope of finding it favourably received, I have the honour of presenting to your Excellency my appeal for mercy on behalf of Miss Cavell.

"I take this opportunity of renewing to your Excellency the assurances of my high esteem.

"BRAND WHITLOCK."

#### THE LAST HOURS.

The Rev. H. S. T. Gahan, the British Chaplain at Brussels, was allowed to see Nurse Cavell in her last hours, at about the time when the German officials were assuring those of the United States Legation that sentence had not been passed. He wrote to Mr. Brand Whitlock :

"To my astonishment and relief, I found my friend perfectly calm and resigned. But this could not lessen the tenderness and intensity of feeling on either part during that last interview of almost an hour.

"Her first words to me were upon a matter concerning herself personally, but the solemn asseveration which accompanied them was made expressly in the light of God and Eternity. She then added that she wished all her friends to know that she willingly gave her life for her country, and said : 'I have no fear nor shrinking ; I have seen death so often that it is not strange or fearful to me.' She further said : 'I thank God for this ten weeks' quiet before the end.' 'Life has always been hurried and full of difficulty.' 'This time of rest has been a great mercy.' 'They have all been very kind to me here. But this I would say, standing as I do in view of God and Eternity, I realise that patriotism is not enough. I must have no hatred or bitterness towards anyone.'

"We partook of the Holy Communion together, and she received the Gospel message of consolation with all her heart. At the close of the little service I began to repeat the words, 'Abide with Me,' and she joined softly in the end."

#### THE MURDER OF CAPTAIN FRYATT.

On March 28th, 1915, Captain Charles Fryatt, of the Great Eastern Railway's steamship *Brussels*, escaped from a German submarine by turning on her and attempting to ram. On June 23rd, 1916, he and his ship were captured by the Germans and taken into Zeebrugge. On July 28th he was called before a German Naval Court Martial at Bruges and sentenced to death. He was shot that evening. It was acknowledged by his murderers that he failed to ram, and the sentence was passed at the very moment when the American Senate was discussing a measure to provide, at the expense of the State, for the armament of all the most serviceable ships of the American marine. Our own Foreign Office in an urgent message to the American Ambassador in Berlin, had rightly pointed out (on July 25th) that "the act of a merchant ship in steering for an enemy submarine and forcing her to dive is essentially defensive and precisely on the same footing as the use by a defensively-armed vessel of her defensive armament in order to resist capture, which both the United States Government and His Majesty's Government hold to be the exercise of an undoubted right." Captain Fryatt,

in fact, had acted strictly in accordance with a precedent recognised by all nations in all previous naval wars. By law, as by humanity, there can be no question as to the validity of that claim. The German officials who murdered Captain Fryatt say that his act "was not an act of self-defence, but a cunning attack by hired assassins. Captain Fryatt boasted of his action, though happily he failed to attain his object. This was brought home to him during the trial by witnesses from the crew of the submarine in question whose evidence was against him . . . he was shot as a *franc-tireur* after calm consideration and thorough investigation," stated they took the course they did because he had acted according to the Admiralty orders, and concluded their *apologia* with the phrase : "One of the many illegal *franc-tireur* actions of the English merchant shipping has found here late, but righteous, punishment."

As a matter of fact, the murder was committed in order to terrorise merchant sailors and to prevent merchant ships either leaving our harbours or coming into them. It has failed most lamentably. And its result has been to strengthen our resolution that, when the war is over, one of the many penalties inflicted on the Germans must be the replacement of every ton of defenceless merchant-shiping they have unjustifiably destroyed, and that until this is done all German funds and property in the British Empire must be sequestrated and held in pledge. These must be the direct consequences of a legal butchery, which, as in the case of Edith Cavell, the Kaiser himself might have prevented had he desired to do so. In each case there was ample time. In each case the protests of our own Government and of American officials had been lodged before the final step was taken. In each case others convicted of similar practices had been pardoned. In each case it was British nationality which confirmed the ultimate penalty against the prisoner. For Captain Fryatt's death there was even less justification than for Nurse Cavell's ; for the latter had admittedly contravened the law, even though it be true that by no other country and by no other soldiers would the death-penalty for such contravention have been enforced against her. Captain Fryatt's action in self-defence, however was not only in accordance with the admitted practice of the rest of the world ; it was also in accordance with Article 2 of the Appendix to the German Naval Prize Regulations, issued in Berlin on June 22nd, 1914, as follows :

"If an armed enemy merchant vessel offers armed resistance to the right of visit, search, and capture, this is to be broken down by all means possible. The enemy Government is responsible for any damage thereby caused to the ship, cargo, and passengers. *The crew are to be treated as prisoners of war.* The passengers are to be liberated unless it is proved that they have taken part in the resistance. In the latter case they are to be proceeded against in accordance with the extraordinary martial law procedure."

In other words, the German code admitted the right to resist in the case of the crew, and only a passenger who joined in that resistance made himself liable to those penalties of a *franc-tireur* which the German Press so unctuously predicted of Captain Fryatt when gloating over his assassination. It is satisfactory to put on record Mr. Asquith's pledge : "His Majesty's Government desire to repeat emphatically their resolve that such crimes shall not, if they can help it, go unpunished. When the time arrives, they are determined to bring to justice the criminals, whoever they may be, and whatever position they may occupy."

In reply to a communication addressed by the International Red Cross Committee in Geneva to belligerent and neutral countries on the subject of reprisals on prisoners of war, Viscount Grey sent the following reply (published on September 1st, 1916) which was communicated to the Government of the Allied and Neutral Powers through His Majesty's representatives :—

"The International Red Cross Committee have addressed to belligerent and neutral nations a letter,

dated July 12th, 1916, in which the Committee plead the cause of prisoners of war, and deprecate the adoption by belligerents of the policy of reprisals.

"His Majesty's Government have throughout the period of hostilities discountenanced that policy on account of its indiscriminating and unjust operation.

"A succession of outrages has, however, been perpetrated by the orders, or with the cognisance and approval, of the German Government, of which the cumulative effect has been to strain the temper and patience of the British people to the breaking point, and to create a situation of the utmost gravity.

"It is unnecessary to attempt an exhaustive enumeration of these outrages, but among them may be mentioned the sinking, in contravention of the law of nations and the usages of war and in defiance of the most elementary principles of humanity, of the vessels *Lusitania* and *Sussex*, whereby hundreds of defenceless civilians, many of them women and children, were sent to their deaths, to the unconcealed satisfaction of the German Press and people; the brutal execution of Nurse Cavell, whose sex and the fact that she had spent a blameless life devoted to the alleviation of suffering, and since the war had even nursed wounded German soldiers, should have been sufficient to secure

a mitigation of her sentence; the criminal desertion by the German authorities of the camps for prisoners of war at Wittenberg and Gardelegen at a time when the unfortunate captives interned there were stricken with disease, itself aggravated, if not initiated, by callous disregard on the part of those in charge of the ordinary hygienic precautions which are essential in a crowded concentration camp; the confiscation by the German Government of about 20 per cent. of the remittances sent to British prisoners of war (combatant and civilians) interned in Germany; and the execution of the captain of the steamship *Brussels* after he had been sentenced to death for having committed an act of self-defence well recognised by the laws of war on sea.

"The International Committee appeal to the belligerent Powers not to attempt to obtain redress for their grievances by resort to reprisals, but to request the neutral Powers to impress on the enemy concerned the considerations of humanity and justice.

"His Majesty's Government readily respond to that appeal, being confident that the neutral Powers and the International Committee will recognise that the demand for reprisals grows in volume and urgency with the recurrence of abuses, and that the surest means of avoiding reprisals is to promote the abandonment of the policy which inspires them."

*Que messieurs les assassins commencent.*

## XVIII.—ZEPPELIN AND SEAPLANE RAIDS: 435 KILLED, 1,048 INJURED.

### ZEPPELIN AND AEROPLANE RAIDS ON UNFORTIFIED TOWNS AND PLACES IN 1915.

TO October 13th there were 24 raids, extending from January 19th, 1915, when 4 civilians were killed and 9 were injured, to that of October 13th, when the heaviest casualty list of 56 people killed and 114 injured was reached by the raid on the Eastern counties and London area.

In all, 168 people were killed, and 416 injured in the 19 raids.

In the raids of September 7th and September 8th, on the Eastern counties and London district, 17 were killed and 39 injured in the first, and 20 killed and 86 injured in the second.

A Report was issued officially giving some particulars of the second of these raids. Two hospitals narrowly escaped damage. In a block of workmen's dwellings 2 children were killed in bed. In a small house belonging to a workman in another part of London 2 other children were killed and buried beneath the ruins of the house. Nine people were killed and 11 injured on a motor-omnibus. Two policemen and 1 Army Service Corps man were killed. No one else in any way connected with the armed forces of the country was either killed or injured.

On the occasion of the more murderous raid of October 13th none save one or two soldiers who were in the streets at the time were combatants. The greatest loss of life was in working-class or residential districts; and except for one chance shot the damage was exclusively on property unconnected with the war. A number

of children, women, and old people were killed, and many more injured dangerously or mortally.

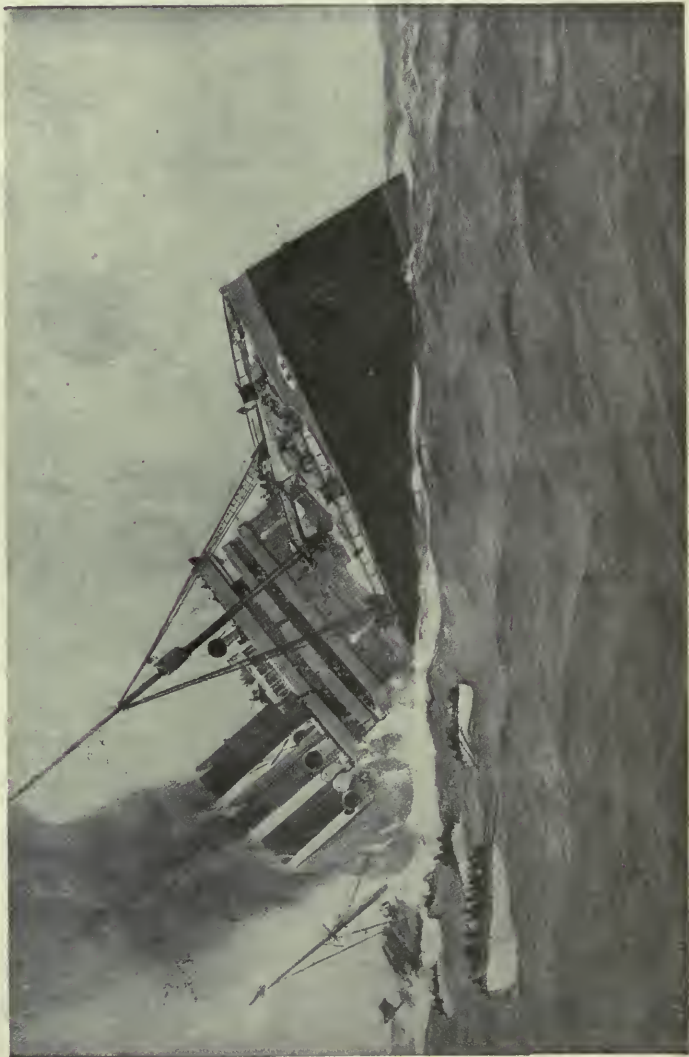
Date.	District.	Casualties.	
		Killed.	Injured.
Jan. 19 ..	Yarmouth and King's Lynn	4	9
Feb. 21 ..	Seaplane, Colchester	—	—
Mar. 20 ..	Seaplane, Deal	—	—
April 14 ..	Blyth and Tyneside	—	2
April 16 ..	Lowestoft, Ipswich and Bury St. Edmund's	—	—
April 30 ..	Ipswich, Bury St. Edmunds	—	—
May 10 ..	Southend	1	—
May 17 ..	Ramsgate	2	8
May 26 ..	Southend	3	—
May 31 ..	Outlying districts of London	6	—
June 4 ..	East and South-East Coasts	—	—
June 6 ..	East Coast	24	40
June 15 ..	North-East Coast	16	40
July 4 ..	Seaplane, Harwich	—	—
Aug. 9 ..	East Coast	18	12
Aug. 12 ..	East Coast	6	23
Aug. 17 ..	Eastern Counties	10	36
Sept. 7 ..	Eastern Counties and London District	17	39
Sept. 8 ..	Eastern Counties and London District	20	86
Sept. 11 ..	East Coast	—	—
Sept. 12 ..	East Coast	—	—
Sept. 13 ..	East Coast	—	—



[Photo: Central News.

R.M.S. PERSIA.

Passenger liner torpedoed without warning in the Mediterranean, and sunk with a loss of 335 lives, 119 of which were passengers, including many women and children. By far the most awful death roll was that of the *Lusitania*, when 1,100 people perished. Other noteworthy cases of the torpedoing of passenger vessels, for which various shallow excuses have been offered and lies put forward, are those of the *Falaba*, *Arabic*, and *Ancona*. A diversion, which bears particularly on the last case mentioned, has been introduced by firing at the lifeboats and the victims in the water.



A GERMAN FALSEHOOD ILLUSTRATED.

German picture showing the sinking of what is represented as the English "Auxiliary Cruiser *Lusitania*" (*Hilfskreuzer*). It lends colour to a characteristic German lie, showing two guns mounted in the bows. It was indisputably proved that the ship carried neither troops nor weapons of offence or defence.



IDOLLISING TIRPITZ.

A huge figure of the German advocate of a ruthless submarine policy being erected for nail driving purposes.

Date	District.	Casualties.	
		Killed.	Injured.
Sept. 13 ..	Seaplane, Kentish Coast ..	—	7
Oct. 13 ..	Eastern Counties and London Area ..	56	114

These figures give a total of 168 killed and 416 injured—584 in all, of which 170 were the result of the raid on October 13th.

#### RAIDS IN 1916.

In 1916 there were 29 raids up to September 29th—20 by Zeppelins and 9 by seaplanes—during which 267 people were killed and 625 injured. Nine of these raids were abortive. The official Reports disclose the same class of damage done and the same unfortunate people either killed or injured—women, children, babies and non-combatants with a few soldiers accidentally hit; but there is this notable difference: retribution attended two of the last Zeppelin raids. Three of their airships were destroyed in September.

The figures as compared with those of last year show a considerable increase.

In 1915 there were killed 168 and wounded 416  
 „ 1916 (to date) „ 267 „ 632  
 giving a total of 435 killed and 1,048 injured.

Date.	District.	Casualties.	
		Killed.	Injured.
Jan. 23 ..	Seaplanes, East Kent Coast ..	1	6
Jan. 24 ..	Seaplane, Dover ..	—	—
Jan. 31 ..	Norfolk, Suffolk, Lincolnshire, Leicestershire, Staffordshire and Derbyshire ..	67	117
Feb. 9 ..	Seaplanes, East Kent ..	—	3
Feb. 20 ..	Seaplanes, Lowestoft and Walmer ..	1	1
Mar. 1 ..	Seaplane, South-East Coast ..	1	—
Mar. 5 ..	Yorkshire, Lincolnshire, Rutland, Huntingdon, Cambridgeshire, Norfolk, Essex and Kent ..	18	52
Mar. 19 ..	Seaplanes, East Kent—Dover and Ramsgate ..	9	31
Mar. 31 ..	Eastern Counties and North-East Coast ..	43	66
April 1 ..	North-East Coast ..	16	100

Date.	District.	Casualties.	
		Killed.	Injured
April 2 ..	South-Eastern Counties of Scotland ..	10	11
April 4 ..	East Coast ..	—	—
April 5 ..	North-East Coast ..	1	8
April 24 ..	Seaplane, Dover and Deal ..	—	—
April 24 ..	Norfolk and Suffolk ..	—	1
April 25 ..	Essex and Kent ..	—	—
April 26 ..	East Kent Coast ..	—	—
May 2 ..	North-East Coast of England and South-East Coast of Scotland ..	9	27
May 3 ..	Seaplane, Deal ..	—	1
May 20 ..	Seaplane, East Kent Coast ..	1	2
July 29 ..	Lincolnshire and Norfolk ..	—	—
July 31 ..	South-Eastern and Eastern Counties ..	—	—
Aug. 3 ..	Eastern and South-Eastern Counties ..	—	—
Aug. 9 ..	East and North-East Coast ..	6	17
Aug. 12 ..	Seaplanes, Dover ..	—	7
Aug. 23 ..	East Coast ..	—	—
Aug. 25 ..	East and South-East Coast and London District ..	8	36
Sept. 2 ..	Eastern and South-Eastern Counties ..	2	13
Sept. 23 ..	Seaplane, East Kent Coast ..	—	—
Sept. 24 ..	Eastern, South-Eastern and East Midland Counties ..	38	125
Sept. 24 ..	South, East and North-East Coasts and North Midlands ..	36	27

#### BOMBS ON PARIS.

*Numbers of men, women, and children killed or injured by the explosion of bombs thrown upon Paris and the suburbs by German aircraft from August 30 to October 12, 1914.*

Total: Women killed, 4; men killed, 7; women wounded, 19; men wounded, 11; children wounded, 1.

#### BOMBARDMENT OF SCARBOROUGH AND THE HARTLEPOOLS.

*December 16th, 1914.*

127 civilians killed (39 women, 39 children), 567 wounded.



Photo by Newspaper Illustrations.

"LEST WE FORGET."

The burial service conducted at the graveside of the victims of the *Lusitania* disaster interred at Queenstown.

TO THE  
LIBRARY OF  
CALIFORNIA

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN BY W. SPEAIGHT AND SONS,  
FETTER LANE, LONDON, E.C.



**RETURN TO** → **CIRCULATION DEPARTMENT**  
202 Main Library

LOAN PERIOD 1	2	3
<b>HOME USE</b>		
4	5	6

**ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS**  
Renewals and Recharges may be made 4 days prior to the due date.  
Books may be Renewed by calling 642-3405.

**DUE AS STAMPED BELOW**


FORM NO. DD6 UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA, BERKELEY  
BERKELEY, CA 94720 ©s

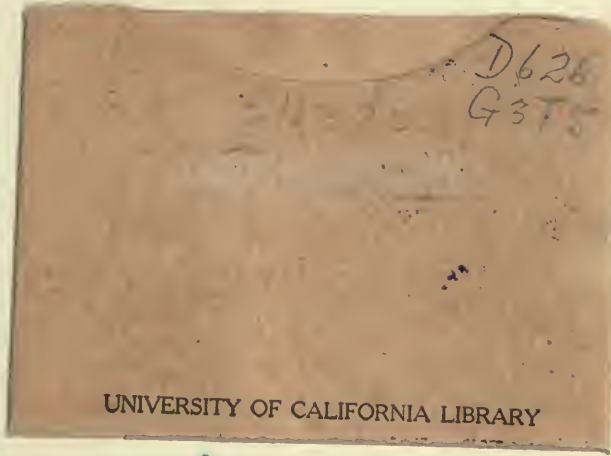
LD 21-100m-12,'43 (8796s)



U.C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C004821002



5

RECEIVED



Silver medal inscribed "Nach Paris" on one side, with a portrait of General Von Kluck on the face. Sir Whitworth Wallis says: "The fool-fury holding the flaming brand possibly delineates unconsciously that Teutonic 'Kultur' with which we are now acquainted—if so, it must be reckoned one of the happiest designs on record." The medal, however, missed its purpose, as the designer, aspiring to the rank of a prophet, made it in anticipation of the fall of Paris.